

COLLECTED PLAYS AND POEMS

This page in the original text is blank.



COLLECTED PLAYS  
AND POEMS

BY  
CALE YOUNG RICE



VOLUME TWO

GARDEN CITY                      NEW YORK  
DOUBLEDAY, PAGE & COMPANY  
1915

*Copyright, 1904, 1909, 1910, by*  
DOUBLEDAY, PAGE & COMPANY

*All rights reserved, including that of  
translation into foreign languages,  
including the Scandinavian*

*Copyright, 1908, 1909, 1915, by*  
CALE YOUNG RICE

## CONTENTS

---

### MANY GODS

	PAGE
"All's Well" . . . . .	5
The Proselyte Recants . . . . .	8
Love in Japan . . . . .	12
Maple Leaves on Miyajima. . . . .	15
Typhoon . . . . .	17
Penang . . . . .	19
When the Wind Is Low . . . . .	22
The Pagoda Slave . . . . .	24
The Ships of the Sea. . . . .	27
Kinchinjunga . . . . .	28
The Barren Woman . . . . .	31
By the Taj Mahal . . . . .	34
Love's Cynic . . . . .	37
In a Tropical Garden . . . . .	44
The Wind's Word . . . . .	47
The Shrine of Shrines . . . . .	48
From a Felucca . . . . .	49
The Egyptian Wakes . . . . .	50

	PAGE
The Imam's Parable. . . . .	51
Songs of a Sea-Farer. . . . .	53
A Song of the Sects . . . . .	55
The City . . . . .	58
Via Amorosa . . . . .	59
Dusk at Hiroshima . . . . .	61
In a Shinto Temple Garden. . . . .	62
Far Fujiyama . . . . .	63
On Miyajima Mountain. . . . .	64
Old Age . . . . .	66
On the Yang-tse-Kiang . . . . .	67
The Sea-Armies . . . . .	69
The Christian in Exile . . . . .	71
The Parsee Woman . . . . .	73
Shah Jehan to Mumtaz Mahal. . . . .	75
Princess Jehanara . . . . .	77
A Singhalese Love Lament . . . . .	78
On the Arabian Gulf. . . . .	81
The Ramessid . . . . .	82
Immortal Foes . . . . .	83
The Conscript . . . . .	85
The Cross of the Sepulchre . . . . .	87
Alpine Chant . . . . .	88
The Man of Might . . . . .	90
In Time of Awe . . . . .	91
Sunrise in Utah . . . . .	93
Consolation . . . . .	94

## CONTENTS

vii

	PAGE
Waves . . . . .	96
Vis Ultima . . . . .	98
Meredith . . . . .	100

## CHARLES DI TOCCA

Charles di Tocca, a play. . . . .	109
-----------------------------------	-----

## NIRVANA DAYS

Invocation . . . . .	245
The Strong Man to His Sires . . . . .	246
The Fairies of God . . . . .	251
A Song of the Old Venetians . . . . .	253
Nirvana Days . . . . .	255
The Young to the Old . . . . .	268
Off the Irish Coast . . . . .	270
A Vision of Venus and Adonis . . . . .	271
Somnambulism . . . . .	273
Serenata Magica . . . . .	275
O-Shichi and Moto . . . . .	278
A Prayer . . . . .	287
The Infinite's Quest . . . . .	288
Lad and Lass. . . . .	289
At Stratford . . . . .	291
The Image Painter . . . . .	292
Wanda. . . . .	294

	PAGE
In a Storm . . . . .	298
Antagonists . . . . .	299
Seeds . . . . .	301
The Soul's Return . . . . .	302
Romance . . . . .	304
On the Atlantic . . . . .	306
The Great Buddha of Kamakura to the Sphinx	307
A Nikko Shrine . . . . .	309
The Question . . . . .	311
I'll Look No More . . . . .	313
Night's Occultism . . . . .	314
Uncrowned . . . . .	315
Written in Hell . . . . .	316
At the Helm . . . . .	321
Dead Love . . . . .	322
Mortal Sin . . . . .	324
Sea-Mad . . . . .	325
Wormwood . . . . .	327
Quest and Requital . . . . .	329
Love in Extremis . . . . .	336
Quarrel . . . . .	338
Of the Flesh . . . . .	340
A Death Song . . . . .	343
On Ballyteigue Bay . . . . .	345
Night-Riders . . . . .	349
Honor . . . . .	352
Brude . . . . .	355

## SONG-SURF

	PAGE
With Omar . . . . .	377
Jael . . . . .	390
To the Sea . . . . .	396
The Day-Moon . . . . .	399
A Sea-Ghost . . . . .	401
On the Moor . . . . .	403
The Cry of Eve . . . . .	405
Mary at Nazareth . . . . .	409
Adelil . . . . .	412
Intimation . . . . .	414
In July . . . . .	415
From Above . . . . .	418
By the Indus . . . . .	419
Evocation . . . . .	421
The Child God Gave . . . . .	423
The Winds . . . . .	425
Transcended . . . . .	428
Love's Way to Childhood . . . . .	429
Autumn . . . . .	431
Shinto . . . . .	432
Maya . . . . .	434
A Japanese Mother . . . . .	436
The Dead Gods . . . . .	438
Call to Your Mate, Bob-White . . . . .	442
The Dying Poet . . . . .	444

	PAGE
The Outcast . . . . .	447
April . . . . .	450
August Guests . . . . .	452
To a Dove . . . . .	453
At Tintern Abbey . . . . .	455
Oh, Go Not Out . . . . .	457
Human Love . . . . .	459
The Victory . . . . .	460
At Winter's End . . . . .	461
Mother-Love . . . . .	463
To a Warbler. . . . .	465
Songs to A. H. R.	
The World's, and Mine . . . . .	467
Love-Call in Spring . . . . .	468
Mating . . . . .	469
Untold . . . . .	470
Love-Watch . . . . .	471
At Amalfi . . . . .	471
The Atoner . . . . .	473
The Ramble . . . . .	474
Return . . . . .	477
Lisette. . . . .	480
From One Blind . . . . .	482
In a Cemetery . . . . .	483
Waking . . . . .	485
Storm-Ebb . . . . .	486
Lingering . . . . .	488



CONTENTS

xi

	PAGE
Faun-Call . . . . .	490
The Lighthouseman . . . . .	492
Serenity . . . . .	494
Wanton June . . . . .	496
Spirit of Rain. . . . .	498
Tearless . . . . .	499
Sunset-Lovers. . . . .	501
The Empty Cross . . . . .	503
Song . . . . .	505
To Her Who Shall Come . . . . .	506
Storm-Twilight . . . . .	509
War . . . . .	510
Wildness . . . . .	511
Before Autumn . . . . .	512
Fulfilment. . . . .	514
Last Sight of Land . . . . .	516
Silence. . . . .	518

DAVID

David, a play. . . . .	525
------------------------	-----

This page in the original text is blank.

# MANY GODS

FIRST PUBLISHED 1910

To  
FINIS KING FARR  
AN OLD AND DEAR COMRADE

This page in the original text is blank.

## “ALL’S WELL”

### I

The illimitable leaping of the sea,  
The mouthing of his madness to the moon,  
The seething of his endless sorcery,  
His prophecy no power can attune,  
Swept over me as, on the sounding prow  
Of a great ship that steered into the stars,  
I stood and felt the awe upon my brow  
Of death and destiny and all that mars.

### II

The wind that blew from Cassiopeia cast  
Wanly upon my ear a rune that rung;  
The sailor in his eyrie on the mast  
Sang an “All’s well,” that to the spirit clung

Like a lost voice from some aërial realm  
Where ships sail on forever to no shore,  
Where Time gives Immortality the helm,  
And fades like a far phantom from life's door.

## III

“And is all well, O Thou Unweariable,  
Who launchest worlds upon bewildered space,”  
Rose in me, “All? or did thy hand grow dull  
Building this world that bears a piteous race?  
O was it launched too soon or launched too late?  
Or can it be a derelict that drifts  
Beyond thy ken toward some reef of Fate  
On which Oblivion's sand forever shifts?”

## IV

The sea grew softer as I questioned — calm  
With mystery that like an answer moved,  
And from infinity there fell a balm,  
The old peace that God *is*, tho all unproved.



The old faith that the gulfs sidereal stun  
The soul, and knowledge drown within their deep,  
There is no world that wanders, no not one  
Of all the millions, that He does not keep.

## THE PROSELYTE RECANTS

*(In Japan)*

Where the fair golden idols  
Sit in darkness and in silence  
While the temple drum beats solemnly and slow;  
Where the tall cryptomerias  
Sway in worship round about  
And the rain that is falling whispers low;  
I can hear strange voices  
Of the dead and forgotten,  
On the dimly rising incense I can see  
The lives I have lived,  
And my lives unbegotten,  
*Namu Amida Butsu* pity me!

I was born this karma  
Of a mother in Chuzenji,  
Where Nantai-zan looks down into the lake;  
Where the white-thronged pilgrims  
Climb to altars in the clouds  
And behold the holy eastern dawn awake.  
It was there I wandered  
Till a priest of the Christians  
With the crucifix he wore compelled my gaze.  
In grief I had grown,  
So upon its grief I pondered.  
*Namu Amida Butsu, keep my days!*

It was wrong, he told me,  
To pray Jiso for my children,  
And Binzuru for healing of my ills.  
And our gods so many  
Were conceived, he said, in sin,  
From Lord Shaka to the least upon the hills.

In despair I listened  
For my heart beat hopeless,  
Not a temple of my land had helped me live.  
But alas that day  
When I let my soul be christened!  
*Namu Amida Butsu, O forgive!*

For the Christ they gave me  
As the only Law and Lotus,  
As the only way to Light that will not wane,  
May perchance have power  
For the people of the West,  
But to me he seemed the servitor of pain.  
For in pain he perished  
As one born to passion:  
In some other life no doubt his sin was great,  
Tho they told me no,  
Those who followed him and cherished.  
*Namu Amida Butsu, such is fate.*

So again to idols  
Of the Buddha who is boundless,  
While the temple drum is beating thro the rain,  
I have turned from treason  
Into Meditation's truth,  
From the strife the Western god regards as gain.  
And if now I'm dying  
As the voices tell me,  
To the lives that I must live I'll meekly go;  
Till my long grief ends  
In Nirvana, and my sighing.  
*Namu Amida Butsu*, be it so!

## LOVE IN JAPAN

### I

Dragon-fly lighting  
On the temple-bell,  
Whose soul do you bear  
On the Day of the Dead?  
The soul of my lover?  
Ah me, the plighting  
Between two hearts  
That were never wed!

Dragon-fly, quickly,  
The priest is coming!  
Oh, the boom  
Of the bitter bell!

Now you are gone  
And my tears fall thickly.  
How of Heaven  
Do the gods make Hell!

## II

The sêmi is silent  
    (Autumn rains!)  
The wind-bells tinkle  
    (How chill it is!)  
The quick lights come  
On the shoji-panes.  
Come, O Baku,  
Eater of dreams!

The maple darkens  
    (Pale grow I!)  
The near night shivers  
    (The temple fades.)

Haunting love  
Will not cease to cry!  
Come, O Baku,  
Eater of dreams!

The wild mists gather  
    (Ah, my tears!)  
The pane-lights vanish  
    (For some there is rest.)  
But for me —  
The remembered years!  
Come, O Baku,  
Eater of dreams!



## MAPLE LEAVES ON MIYAJIMA

The summer has come,  
The summer has gone,  
And the maple leaves lift fairy hands  
That ripple upon the winds of dawn  
Where the dim pagoda stands.  
They ripple and beckon yearningly  
To their sister fairies over the sea,  
But help comes not,  
So they fall and flee  
From Autumn over the sands.

And down the mountain.  
And into the tide,  
Some are blown where the sampans glide,  
And some are strewn by the temple's side,

And some by the torii.  
But Autumn ever  
Pursues them till,  
As ever before,  
She has her will,  
And leaves them desolate, dead and still,  
Ravished afar and wide;  
Leaves them desolate; crying shrill,  
“No beauty shall abide!”

## TYPHOON

*(At Hong-kong)*

I was weary and slept on the Peak ;  
    The air clung close like a shroud,  
And ever the blue-fly at my ear  
    Hung haunting and hot and loud ;  
I awoke and the sky was dun  
    With awe and a dread that soon  
Went shuddering thro my heart, for I knew  
    That it meant typhoon! typhoon!

In the harbour below, far down,  
    The junks like fowl in a flock  
Were tossing in wingless terror, or fled  
    Fluttering in from the shock.  
The city, a breathless bend  
    Of roofs, by the water strewn,

Lay silent and waiting, yet there was none  
Within it but said typhoon!

Then it came, like a million winds  
Gone mad immeasurably,  
A torrid and tortuous tempest stung  
By rape of the fair South Sea.  
And it swept like a scud escaped  
From craters of sun or moon,  
And struck as no power of Heaven could,  
Or of Hell — typhoon! typhoon!

And the junks were smitten and torn,  
The drowning struggled and cried,  
Or, dashed on the granite walls of the sea,  
In succourless hundreds died.  
Till I shut the sight from my eyes  
And prayed for my soul to swoon:  
If ever I see God's face, let it  
Be guiltless of that typhoon!

## PENANG

I want to go back to Singapore  
And ship along the Straits,  
To a bungalow I know beside Penang;  
Where cocoanut palms along the shore  
Are waving, and the gates  
Of Peace shut Sorrow out forevermore.  
I want to go back and hear the surf  
Come beating in at night,  
Like the washing of eternity over the dead.  
I want to see dawn fare up and day  
Go down in golden light;  
I want to go back to Penang! I want to go back!

I want to go back to Singapore  
And up along the Straits

To the bungalow that waits me by the tide.  
Where the Tamil and Malay tell their lore  
At evening — and the fates  
Have set no soothless canker at life's core.  
I want to go back and mend my heart  
Beneath the tropic moon,  
While the tamarind-tree is whispering thoughts  
of sleep.  
I want to believe that Earth again  
With Heaven is in tune.  
I want to go back to Penang! I want to go back!

I want to go back to Singapore  
And ship along the Straits  
To the bungalow I left upon the strand.  
Where the foam of the world grows faint before  
It enters, and abates  
In meaning as I hear the palm-wind pour.  
I want to go back and end my days  
Some evening when the Cross

On the southern sky hangs heavily far and sad.

I want to remember when I die

That life elsewhere was loss.

I want to go back to Penang! I want to go back!

## WHEN THE WIND IS LOW

*(To A. H. R.)*

When the wind is low, and the sea is soft,  
    And the far heat-lightning plays  
On the rim of the West where dark clouds nest  
    On a darker bank of haze;  
When I lean o'er the rail with you that I love  
    And gaze to my heart's content;  
I know that the heavens are there above —  
    But you are my firmament.

When the phosphor-stars are thrown from the bow  
    And the watch climbs up the shroud;  
When the dim mast dips as the vessel slips  
    Thro the foam that seethes aloud;



I know that the years of our life are few,  
And fain as a bird to flee,  
That time is as brief as a drop of dew —  
But you are Eternity.

## THE PAGODA SLAVE

*(At Shwe Dagohn, in old Rangoon)*

All night long the pagoda slave  
Hears the wind-bells high in the air  
Tinkle with low sweet tongue and grave  
    In praise of Lord Gautama.  
All night long where the lone spire sends  
Its golden height to the starry light  
    He hears their tune  
    And watches the moon  
And fears he shall never reach Nirvana.

Round and round by a hundred shrines  
Glittering at the great Shwe's base  
Falls the sound of his feet mid lines  
    Droned from the sacred Wisdom.

Round and round where the idols gaze  
So pitiless on his pained distress  
    He passes on,  
    Pale-eyed and wan —  
A pariah like the dogs behind him.

Oh, what sin in a life begot  
Thousands of lives ago did he sin  
That he is now by all forgot,  
    Even by Lord Gāutama?  
Oh, what sin, that the lowest shun  
His very name as a thing of shame —  
    A sound to taint  
    The winds that faint  
From the high bells that hear it uttered!

Midnight comes and the hours of morn,  
Tapers die and the flowers all  
From the most fêted altars: lorn  
    And desolate is their odour.

Midnight goes, but he watches still  
By each cold spire the moon sets fire,  
    By every palm  
    Whose silvery calm  
Pillar and jewelled porch pray under.

Is it dawn that is breaking? . . . No,  
Only a star that falls in the sea,  
Only a wind-bell's louder flow  
    Of praise to Lord Gautama.  
Faithless dawn! with illusive feet  
It comes too late to ease his fate.  
    He sinks asleep  
    A helpless heap,  
Tho for it he never may reach Nirvana.

## THE SHIPS OF THE SEA

Into port when the sun was setting  
Rode the ship that bore my love,  
Over the breakers wildly fretting,  
Under the skies above.

Down to the beach I ran to meet him;  
He would come as he had said:  
And he came — in a sailor's coffin,  
Dead! . . . . .

O the ships of the sea! . . . . .  
The women they set apart! . . . .  
The tide has nothing now to tell me,  
The breakers break my heart!

## KINCHINJUNGA

*(Which is the next highest of mountains)*

### I

O white Priest of Eternity, around  
Whose lofty summit veiling clouds arise  
Of the earth's immemorial sacrifice  
To Brahma in whose breath all lives and dies;  
O Hierarch enrobed in timeless snows,  
First-born of Asia whose maternal throes  
Seem changed now to a million human woes,  
Holy thou art and still! Be so, nor sound  
One sigh of all the mystery in thee found.

### II

For in this world too much is overclear,  
Immortal Ministrant to many lands,  
From whose ice-altars flow to fainting sands

Rivers that each libation poured expands.  
Too much is known, O Ganges-giving sire;  
Thy people fathom life and find it dire,  
Thy people fathom death, and, in it, fire  
To live again, tho in Illusion's sphere,  
Behold concealed as Grief is in a tear.

## III

Wherefore continue, still enshrined, thy rites,  
Tho dark Thibet, that dread ascetic, falls  
In strange austerity, whose trance appals,  
Before thee, and a suppliant on thee calls.  
Continue still thy silence high and sure,  
That something beyond fleeting may endure —  
Something that shall forevermore allure  
Imagination on to mystic flights  
Wherein alone no wing of Evil lights.

## IV

Yea, wrap thy awful gulfs and acolytes  
Of lifted granite round with reachless snows.

Stand for Eternity while pilgrim rows  
Of all the nations envy thy repose.  
Ensheath thy swart sublimities, unscaled.  
Be that alone on earth which has not failed.  
Be that which never yet has yearned or ailed,  
But since primeval Power upreared thy heights  
Has stood above all deaths and all delights.

v

And tho thy loftier Brother shall be King,  
High-priest be thou to Brahma unrevealed,  
While thy white sanctity forever sealed  
In icy silence leaves desire congealed.  
In ghostly ministrations to the sun,  
And to the mendicant stars and the moon-nun,  
Be holy still, till East to West has run,  
And till no sacrificial suffering  
On any shrine is left to tell life's sting.



## THE BARREN WOMAN

*(Benares)*

At the burning-ghat, O Kali,  
    Mother divine and dread,  
See, I am waiting with open lips  
    Over the newly dead.  
I am childless and barren; pity  
    And let me catch the soul  
Of him who here on the kindled bier  
    Pays to Existence toll.

See, by his guileless body  
    I cook the bread and eat.  
Give me the soul he does not need  
    Now, for conception sweet.  
**Hear**, or my lord and husband  
    Shall send me from his door

And take to his side a fairer bride  
Whose breast shall be less poor.

Oft I have sought thy temples,  
By Ganges now I seek,  
Where ashes of all the dead are strewn,  
And is my prayer not meek?  
The ghats and the shrines and the people  
That bathe in the holy Stream  
Have heard my cry, O goddess high,  
Shall I not have my dream?

The women of Oudh and Jaipur  
Look on my face with scorn.  
Children about their garments cling,  
To me shall none be born?  
The death-fires quiver faster,  
O hasten, goddess, a sign,  
That from this doom into my womb  
Thy pledge has passed, divine.

Woe! there is naught but ashes,  
Now, and the weepers go.  
Lone on the ghat they leave me, lone,  
With but the River's flow.  
Kali, I ask not jewels  
Nor justice, beauty nor shrift,  
But for the lowest woman's right,  
A child — tho I die of the gift!

## BY THE TAJ MAHAL

Under the Indian stars,  
Mumtaz Mahal, I am sitting,  
Watching them wind their silent way  
Over your wistful Tomb;  
Watching the crescent prow  
Of the moon among them flitting,  
Fair as the shallop that bore your soul  
To Paradise's Room.

Under the Indian stars,  
With palm and peepul about me,  
With dome and kiosk and minaret  
Mounting against the sky,  
I seem to see your face  
In all the fairness without me;

In all the sadness that fills my heart  
To hear your lover's cry.

Under the Indian stars  
I look for your Jasmine Tower,  
Along the River whose barren bed  
Lies gray beneath the moon.  
And thro its magic doors  
You seem like a spirit flower,  
Wandering back from Allah's bourne  
To seek for some lost boon.

Under the Indian stars  
I see you softly moving,  
Among your jewel-lit maidens there,  
A sweet and ghostly queen.  
And the scent of attar flung  
In your marble font seems proving  
That passion never can die from love,  
If truly love has been.

Under the Indian stars  
*He* comes, "the Shadow of Allah,"  
Jehan, the lord of Magnificence,  
The liege who holds your heart.  
The silver doors swing back  
And alone with him you hallow  
The amorous night—whose moon has made  
Such visions in me start.

Under the Indian stars —  
But the end of all is moaning!  
I hear his dying breath that from  
Your Tomb shall never die.  
For every jasper flower  
He set in its dream seems loaning  
To Beauty a grief, Mumtaz Mahal,  
And unto Fate a sigh.

## LOVE'S CYNIC

### I

O you poets, ever pretending  
Love is immortal, pipe the truth!  
Empty your books of lies, the ending  
Of no passion can be — Youth.  
“Heaven,” you breathe, “will join the broken?”  
Come, was the Infinite e'er wed,  
That He must evermore be thinking  
Of your wedding bed?

### II

Pipe the truth! tho it clip the glamour  
Out of your rhymes and rip your dream.  
Is death a wench you would enamour,  
Wistful thus, with a word-stream?

No. It is but a Sponge that passes,  
One the Appeaseless e'er will squeeze  
Back into Lethe's flood — whose lasting  
Is eternities.

## III

“False!” cry you, “and an unbeseeming  
Blasphemy!” — Well, look around.  
Is it not only in blaspheming  
Truth is ever to be found?  
Whether it be, one thing I ask you,  
Lovers and poets, tell, I pray,  
Was there ever a love-oath ended  
Ere the Judgment Day?

## IV

“O,” you answer, “ill is in all things.”  
But in an ancient lie what's good?  
Is it not better just to call things  
What they are — not what we would?



When you are clinging to your mistress,  
Love does seem for Eternity.  
Cling to her then, but know that Wanting  
Fools the best that be.

## V

“Yet her brows and her eyes that murmur  
All the music,” you say, “of God!”  
Press her lips but a little firmer —  
You will feel that they are — sod.  
“But there is living soul beyond them,  
And it is love’s till all things end?”  
Children alone build Paradises  
With but pence to spend.

## VI

“Ai-ho now! that is like the cynic,”  
Pitying runs your poet-smile,  
“He has sat at the Devil’s clinic  
With some dead love up the while.”

Dead or alive are one with passions,  
 Under the potent knife of Truth  
 They will be seen composed of craving —  
 And a little ruth.

## VII

“Then the world on a lie is living?”  
 Many a lie has filled its maw!  
 “Better illusion tho than giving  
 Such assent to a *loveless* Law?”  
 Well, there’s a saying Socratean  
 That in his ditch the swine is sure.  
 Yet does he prove by his contentment  
 That it will endure?

## VIII

Clasp her close! But the truth is in you,  
 Tho you have rhymed and rammed it down,  
 Hid it with honey-words that win you  
 Wreaths that you know bedeck the clown.

Kings they will call you and uplifters  
Of your kind? Lord save the mark,  
That we are still for fire dependent  
On so false a spark.

## IX

And so fond! for you hold immortal  
What has been born a day or two!  
“But it was destined?” Ay, your portal  
Only has God to heed — and you!  
He with his *trillion* thirsty planets,  
All in the throes of death and life,  
Surely has time to spare for choosing  
Your behooven wife!

## X

By my faith, there is not a creature  
Mad as a poet, pants the breeze!  
Give him a mistress and he'll preach her  
As creation's Masterpiece.

Let him but lean for half an hour  
Over her lips and he will swear  
That he would dive thro death unfathomed  
To regain her there.

## XI

And believe that his oath is able!  
That there is not in all the sea  
Water enough to quench the fable  
Of his soul's intensity.  
Yet there was never a rose that blossomed  
And endured beyond its day.  
There was never a fire enkindled  
But Cold had its way.

## XII

"Pessimist," is your mortal answer,  
"Wait till the love-wind pierces you!"  
Wait? I have been the veriest dancer  
To it, and, dupe still, would do

Truth to the death — shall I confess it? —  
For but a moment on one breast.  
Wherefore I add — and Adam bless it! —  
Who loves once is like the rest.

## IN A TROPICAL GARDEN

*(Peradeniya, Ceylon)*

### I

The sun moves here as a master-mage of nature all  
day long,

With fingers of heat and light that touch to a  
mystical growth all things.

The spell of him puts pale Time to sleep, as an opiate  
strange and strong,

And a waft of his wand, the wind, enchantment  
brings.

### II

The python roots of the rubber-tree, where the cobra  
slips in peace,

Are wonders that he has waved from the earth as  
a presage of his power.

And the giant stems of the bamboo-grass, the pool  
astounded, sees,  
Are a marvel to keep it still hour after hour.

## III

The long lianas that reach in dreamy rout from tree  
to tree  
Are dazed with the sense of sap he calls to the  
tangle of their sprays.  
The scarlet-hearted hibiscus stands entranced and  
the torrid bee  
Is husht upon its rim, as in amaze .

## IV

And there the palm, the talipot, with its lofty blossom-  
spire,  
The cocoanut and the slim areca listening await  
What sorceries of his trembling rays of equatorial  
fire  
Will next be laid upon some lesser mate.

## V

For all day long it is so; his hot hypnotic eye  
commands

With steady ray; and the earth obeys and brings  
enchantment forth.

And all night long in the humid dark the high-  
voiced hyla-bands

Chant of it in chill strain from South to North.

## VI

A wondrous mage is he, in a land where dreams to  
verity

Are wrought as swift as clouds are wrought, when  
winds wing up the South.

The mage of a land born of the sea, and destined  
e'er to be

Beyond all fear of famishing and drouth.



## THE WIND'S WORD

A star that I love,  
The sea, and I,  
Spake together across the night.  
“Have peace,” said the star,  
“Have power,” said the sea;  
“Yea!” I answered, “and Fame’s delight!”

The wind on his way  
To Araby  
Paused and listened and sighed and said,  
“I passed on the sands  
A Pharaoh’s tomb:  
All these did he have — and he is dead.”

## THE SHRINE OF SHRINES

There is in Egypt by the ancient Nile  
A temple of imperishable stone,  
Stupendous, columned, hieroglyphed, and known  
To all the world as Faith's supremest shrine.  
Half in debris it stands, a granite pile  
Gigantic, stayed midway in resurrection,  
An awe, an inspiration, a dejection  
To all who would the cryptic past divine.  
The god of it was Ammon, and a throng  
Of worshippers from Thebes the royal-gated  
Forever at its fervid pylons waited  
While priests poured ever a prophetic song.  
And yet this Ammon, who gave Egypt laws,  
Is not — and is forgot — and never was!

## FROM A FELUCCA

A white tomb in the desert,  
An Arab at his prayers  
Beside the Nile's dark water,  
Where the lone camel fares.  
An ibis on the sunset,  
A slow shadouf at rest,  
And in the caravansary  
Low music for the guest.

Above the tawny city  
A gleam of minarets,  
Resounding the muezzin's  
Clear call as the sun sets.  
A mystery, a silence,  
A breathing of strange balm,  
A peace from Allah on the wind  
And on the sky his calm.

## THE EGYPTIAN WAKES

I woke at night in my eternal tomb  
The desert sands had hid a thousand years,  
And heard the Nile-crier across the gloom  
Calling, "The flood has come! beseech the gods!"  
I rose in haste, and ran amid blind fears  
To the barterers of grain and oil and wine,  
Culled for the praise and service of divine  
Great Isis, by the slave who for her plods.  
But as I passed along, woe! what was this,  
Strange faces and strange fashions and strange fanes  
Standing upon the midnight; Oh, the pains  
That swept across my startled thought's abyss!  
I moaned. My body crumbled into dust.  
And then my soul fled Here — where all souls must.

## THE IMAM'S PARABLE

Behold, the wind of the Desert rose,  
    Khamsin, in a shroud of sand,  
And swept the Libyan waste, across  
    To far Somali-land.

His voice was thick with the drouth of death  
And smote the earth as a burning breath,  
Or as a curse which Allah saith  
    Unto a demon-band.

The caravan from the oasis  
    Of palm-engirt Kûrkûr  
Shuddered and couched in shaken heaps,  
    The horror to endure.

Its mighty Sheik, like a soul in Hell  
Who longs for the lute of Israfel,

Longed for the trickle of Keneh's well,  
Imperishably pure!

Three days he longed, and the wind three days  
About him whirled the shroud.  
Then did a shrill dawn bring the sun —  
And a gaunt vulture-crowd.  
A few bleak bones on the Desert still  
Lie for the Judgment Day to thrill  
Again into life — if Allah will:  
*Let not your heart be proud.*

## SONGS OF A SEA-FARER

### I

Many are on the sea to-day  
    With all sails set.  
The tide rolls in a restive gray,  
    The wind blows wet.  
The gull is weary of his wings,  
And I am weary of all things.

Heavy upon me longing lies,  
    My sad eyes gaze  
Across sad leagues that sink and rise  
    And sink always.  
My life has sunk and risen so,  
I'd have it cease awhile to flow.

## II

All the winds of the sea weary,

All the waves of the sea rest,

All the wants of my heart settle

Softly now in my breast.

All the stars that in heaven anchor,

Golden buoys of Elysian light,

Send me across the gulf promise

That I am faring right.

So while clouds that are left lonely

At the gates of the far West

Wait, so still, for the moon's coming

To renew their quest,

I am held by a low vesper

Haunting afar the vague twilight,

Then with my soul at peace whisper,

Hallowedly, good-night.



## A SONG OF THE SECTS

*(In a Jerusalem tavern)*

A Latin and Greek, praise God, are we, Armenian  
and Copt,  
And we're all drunk as drunk can be, for we've  
together sopped.  
Not one of us but spits at the creed the others mouth  
and purr,  
But we all believe, we all believe, in the Holy  
Sepulchre!

*The Armenian sings*

The Copt comes out of Egypt-land and with a brag-  
gart face  
He'll tell you that his fathers piled the Pyramids in  
place.

In his Monophysite Christ we set no faith, the  
blasphemer!

But we all believe, we all believe, in the Holy  
Sepulchre!

*The Latin sings*

The Greek will curse you if you call his Ikons images,  
And damns your soul to Hell — no purgatory, if  
you please!

About Procession of the Ghost he's prickly as a burr,  
But he believes, as we all believe, in the Holy  
Sepulchre!

*The Copt sings*

Of heretics God leaves unburnt, Armenians are  
worst,

They will not celebrate the Day, that was for Christ  
the first.

No wine with water mixed for them, as well mix  
heathen myrrh —

Or not believe, as we all believe, in the Holy  
Sepulchre!

*The Greek sings*

The Latin swears his Roman Pope is judge infallible.  
Wherefore you may be very sure the Devil from his  
skull  
Will drink a toast unto all liars, who such a lie  
aver —  
Tho they believe, as we all believe, in the Holy  
Sepulchre!

*The Four again*

A Latin and Greek, praise God, are we, Armenian  
and Copt,  
And we're all drunk as drunk can be, for we've  
together sopped.  
Not one of us but hankers to hang all Jews on a  
Juniper,  
For we all believe, we all believe, in the Holy  
Sepulchre!

## THE CITY

Soft and fair by the Desert's edge,  
And on the dim blue edge of the sea,  
Where white gulls wing all day and fledge  
Their young on the high cliff's sandy ledge,  
There is a city I have beheld,  
Sometime or where, by day or dream,  
I know not which, for it seems enspelled  
As I am by its memory.

Pale minarets of the Prophet pierce  
Above it into the white of the skies,  
And sails enchanted a thousand years  
Flit at its feet while fancy steers.  
No face of all its faces to me  
Is known — no passion of it or pain.  
It is but a city by the sea,  
Enshrined forever beyond my eyes!

## VIA AMOROSA

*(To A. H. R.)*

When we two walk, my love, on the path  
    The moon makes over the sea,  
To the end of the world where sorrow hath  
    An end that is ecstasy,  
Should we not think of the other road  
    Of wearying dust and stone  
Our feet would fare did each but care  
    To follow the way alone?

When we two slip at night to the skies  
    And find one star that we keep  
As a trysting-place to which our eyes  
    May lead our souls ere sleep,  
Should we not pause for a little space  
    And think how many must sigh

Because they gaze over starry ways  
With no heart-comrade by?

When we two then lie down to our dreams  
That deepen still the delight  
Of our wandering where stars and streams  
Stray in immortal light,  
Should we not grieve with the myriads  
From East of earth to West  
Who lay them down at night but to drown  
The longing for some loved breast?

Ah, yes, for life has a thousand gifts,  
But love it is gives life.  
Who walks thro his world alone e'er lifts  
A soul that is sorrow-rife.  
But they to whom it is given to tread  
The moon-path and not sink  
Can ever say the unhappiest way  
Earth has is fair to the brink.

## DUSK AT HIROSHIMA

Softly the bamboo bends  
As the sun sinks down unglowing,  
Softer the willow ends  
A sigh to the dusk around.  
Quickly the brief bat wends  
His flittering way, tho knowing  
How numb is the autumn air,  
That is husht of the city's sound.

Temple and thatch and stream  
Are forgetting the light that lingers,  
Mountain and mist in dream  
Already are lost, afar.  
Faintly comes the beam  
Of the moon—then viewless fingers  
That tinkle a samisen,  
And astir on the East is a star.

## IN A SHINTO TEMPLE GARDEN

Under the torii, robed in green,  
The old priest creeps to his shrine.  
Over the bridge the still stork stands,  
The crow caws not in the pine.

Far in the distance bugles blow,  
War's bloody memory wakes.  
The priest prays on — for his sons that  
are dead,  
And the heart within him breaks.



## FAR FUJIYAMA

Against the phantom gold of failing skies  
I see the ghost of Fujiyama rise  
And think of the innumerable eyes

    That have beheld its vision sunset-crowned.  
The peasant in his field of rice or tea,  
The prince in gardens dreaming by the sea,  
The priest to whom the sêmi in the tree  
    Was but some shrilling soul's incarnate sound

And as I think upon them, lo, the trance  
Of backward time and distant circumstance,  
Of Karma's all-remembering necromance,  
    Lies suddenly before my boundless sight.  
It is as if, a moment, Buddhahood  
Were given to me; as if understood  
At last were vague Nirvana's vaguer good;  
    As if time were dissolved in living light.

## ON MIYAJIMA MOUNTAIN

*To A. H. R.*

Out on the sea the sampans ride  
And the mountains brim with mist and sun.  
O, the spell of Japan again  
Is on us!  
The spell of the old enchanting East,  
Of Buddha and many a blissful priest,  
The spell that has never, never ceased  
To haunt us!

Glad we behold the temple-tops  
And the lanterns in religious row  
Standing, like acolytes of stone,  
To serve us.  
And o'er them the old pagoda prays

Blessing upon their dreaming days,  
And on the eightfold sacred ways  
From Sorrow!

Ah, and the torii too is there,  
Where the sea enters to his shrine  
When for its tidal mystery  
'Tis ready.

He enters now, as the nuptial sea  
Of love first entered our hearts, to be  
Lord of their tides eternally,  
And Master!

## OLD AGE

I have heard the wild geese,  
I have seen the leaves fall,  
There was frost last night  
On the garden wall.  
It is gone to-day  
And I hear the wind call.  
The wind? . . . that is all.

If the swallow will light  
When evening is near;  
If the crane will not scream  
Like a soul in fear;  
I will think no more  
Of the dying year,  
And the wind, its seer.

## ON THE YANG-TSE-KIANG

Down the Yang-tse bat-wing junk  
And tatterdemalion sampan glide,  
Sails of brown and black and yellow swinging.  
Down the Yang-tse bat-wing junks  
Fish-eyed and gaudy take the tide,  
Forth to the sea in sloth they ride,  
The coolies singing.

Off in the field the peasant toils  
And along the canal the low tows slip,  
Fruit of the red persimmon piled upon them.  
Off in the field the peasant toils —  
With lip and brow the dull years strip  
Bare as a tomb — for life's gray grip  
Has grimly drawn them.

High on the hill the yamên rests  
And the temple beside it sleeps in sun,  
Far in the distance faints the city dreary.  
High on the hill the yamên rests,  
And dun dead shadows o'er it run:  
This is the land where Time begun  
And now grows weary.

## THE SEA-ARMIES

The wild sea-armies led by the wind  
Are following in our wake,  
White-crested shouting millions moving on.  
They have broken their camp of Calm and o'er  
The world rebellion make,  
With banner of cloud and mist above them drawn.

They have heard the call of infinite Death,  
The ordering of his word,  
“Arise, go forth and conquer where ye can;  
For that is the only law ye know,  
Its mandate men have heard,  
Let them beware when they your path would span.

“Let them beware, for I am lord  
Of all earth dares to name,

And unto you is given most my might.

Ride on, ye have many a ship to rend,

And many a mast to maim,

And many a land to lash and soul to fright.”

So on they ride, a ravaging horde,

From shore to shuddering shore,

Beyond us in the bleak star-buried dawn;

Nor know that when they have camped again

And sleep, Life will restore

Unto her world the hope they have withdrawn.



## THE CHRISTIAN IN EXILE

(*Mandalay*)

The palms along the old fort wall are paling,  
The mountains in the evening light are red,  
The moon has dropped into the moat from heaven,  
A spell barbaric over all is spread.  
But what is that to him, a stranger lonely,  
In a land strange to all his faith and dim?  
He cares not for old splendours, he would only  
Hear on the air a simple Sabbath hymn.

The paddy-birds their snowy flight are taking  
From the tall tamarind unto their nest,  
The bullock-carts along the road are creaking,  
The bugles o'er the wall are sounding rest.

On a calm jetty looking off to Mecca  
Sons of Mahomet watch the low day's rim.  
He too is waiting for it — with an echo  
Upon his lips of a believer's hymn.

The red gate-towers rise against the twilight,  
The palace of the heathen king is hid,  
The white bridge bent across the moat beside it  
Seems now of all unholinesses rid.  
He wishes it were so with all this city  
Whose Buddha-built pagodas skyward swim;  
But he can only gaze on them and pity —  
And sing within his heart a Christian hymn.

## THE PARSEE WOMAN

*(At Bombay)*

Cast me out from among you,  
I will not lay my child  
There, aloft, where the vultures  
May clamour for him, wild!  
The earth you say is holy,  
Not to be soiled by death,  
And a Parsee still should hold divine  
What Zoroaster saith.

Ay, and so I will hold it,  
But see his pale sweet face,  
As pure as the palest flower  
Left dead in Spring's embrace.  
The sun we worship daily  
Shrined it for seven years,

Then shall it go to cruel beaks,  
There where the sea-wind veers?

No, no, no! tho you send me  
A beggar from your door,  
You, my lord, whom I honour,  
And you, his sisters four,  
To whom there have come no children  
To make your bosoms feel  
How even a thought so full of throe  
Can make my sick brain reel.

Ah, you are deaf? you scorn me  
And loathe, as a thing defiled?  
My lord, I am but a woman  
Who longs to see her child  
Laid safe in a tomb, entreaured  
Under the shrouding sod.  
O would I had never given birth,  
Or that earth had no God!

## SHAH JEHAN TO MUMTAZ MAHAL

I see as in a pale mirage  
The palm that o'er you sways,  
The waters of the Jumna wan are beating.  
One pearl-cloud, like a far-off Taj,  
A dome of grief betrays —  
Its beauty as was yours will be too fleeting!

The world is wider than I knew  
Now that your face is gone!  
While you were here no destiny seemed boundless.  
So I am lost and find no clue  
To any dusk or dawn!  
Life has become a quest decayed and groundless

Come back! come back ! or let me find  
The jungle leads at last

Unto your lips and bosom recreated!

O somewhere I again must wind

My arms about you, cast

Into one word my love all unabated!

## PRINCESS JEHANARA

Where the road leads from Delhi to the South,  
And dingy camel-trains creep in the dust  
Past ruin-heaps of old Firozabad  
And Indropat unpitied of the drouth;  
By a lone tree, above a Pool whose sad  
Prayer-water all the turban-people trust,  
Is a heat-hidden tomb, and on it just  
A few faint blades of bent and grieving grass.  
“Jehanara’s it is — ” with ready mouth  
A Moslem tells the travel-worn who pass  
To lordlier-rising tombs — “Jehanara’s.  
One time her heart, heavy with pity, said:  
*The covering of the poor is only grass,  
Let no more then be mine when I am dead.*”

## A SINGHALESE LOVE LAMENT

As the cocoanut-palm  
That pines, my love,  
Away from the sound  
Of the planter's voice,  
Am I, for I hear  
No more resound  
Your song by the pearl-strewn sea!  
The sun may come  
And the moon wax round,  
And in its beam  
My mates may rejoice,  
But I feast not  
And my heart is dumb,  
As I long, O long, for thee!



In the jungle-deeps,  
    Where the cobra creeps,  
The leopard lies  
    In wait for me.  
But O, my love,  
    When the daylight dies  
There is more to my dread than he!  
    Harsh lonely tears  
    That assail my eyes  
Are worse to bear,  
    For the misery  
That makes them well  
    Is the long, long years  
That I moan away from thee!

O again, again,  
    In my katamaran  
A-keel would I push  
    To your palmy door!  
Again would I hear  
    The heave and hush

Of your song by the plantain-tree.

But far away

Do I toil and crush

The hopes that arise

At my sick heart's core.

For never near

Does it come, the day

That draws me again to thee!

## ON THE ARABIAN GULF

From a far minaret of faithful cloud  
A wraith-muezzin of the sunset cried  
Over the sea that swung with sultan pride,  
“Allah is Beauty, there is none beside!  
Allah is Beauty, not to be denied  
By Death or any Infidel dark-browed!”

And every wave that worshipped, every one  
Under the mosque of heaven arching high,  
Lifted a white crest with assenting sigh  
And answered, “Let all gods but Allah die,  
Yea, let all gods! until the world shall cry,  
Beauty alone is left under the sun!”

## THE RAMESSID

Upon an image of immortal stone,  
Seated and vast, the moon of Luxor falls,  
Lending to it a stillness that appals,  
A mystery Osirian and strange.  
The hands outplaced upon the knees in lone  
And placid majesty reveal the power  
Of Egypt in her most triumphal hour,  
The calm of tyranny that cannot change.  
It is of that Great king, who heard the cries  
Of millions toil to lift him to the skies,  
Who saw them perish at their task like flies,  
Yet let no eye of pity o'er them range.  
What rue, then, if his desecrated face  
Rots now at Cairo in a mummy case?

## IMMORTAL FOES

At Bedrashein between the pyramids  
I saw the wingèd sun fold up his pinions  
And sink into the nether world's dominions  
Where Set sent ill upon the Egyptian dead.  
I saw the ancient Desert, that outbids  
The Nile for the date-lands between them spread,  
Fling over Memphis that is vanishèd,  
Another shroud of sand, then bid his minions,  
The winds, lie down upon their boundless bed.

I saw where temples vowed to Serapis  
And granite splendours men name Pharaonic  
Are kept by Time in silence and sardonic  
Concealment — mummied in deep mystic tombs.

And when the stars came out in quiet bliss,  
I heard Eternity — with all its dooms  
Past and to come — sound softly the mnemonic  
Of Death who waits all worlds that Life enwombs.

## THE CONSCRIPT

The camel at the old sakiyeh  
    Toils around and round.  
Aweary is he of the Nile  
    And of the wailing sound  
Of the slow wheel he turns all day  
To lift the water on its way  
Over the fields of Ahmed Bey,  
    That with green grain abound.

Aweary is he, too, of fellàheen  
    Who compel him on,  
With thick-voiced chanting till the day  
    Over the West has gone.  
For the bold Desert was he made,  
The Bedouin, his lord, to aid,

Not for this peasant wheel of trade  
That ever must be drawn.

But on he toils while dahabiyeh  
And dark felucca glide  
Below him o'er the glassy flow  
Of the gray river's tide.  
On, on, and then at night lies down,  
In sleep the servile day to drown —  
Like all whom Life turns with a frown  
From their true fate aside.



## THE CROSS OF THE SEPULCHRE

Within the Holy Sepulchre, breast-high,  
There is a cross uncounted lips have kissed,  
Millions the world to dust has long dismissed,  
Millions that now hope of it but to die.  
Pilgrims, I saw, from out far fervid lands  
Of superstition, North and West and South,  
Bend to it each a trembling, reverent mouth,  
Then kneel where Christ was said to loose  
    Death's bands.

And then I wondered if He who believed  
In the One God were wounded sore by this,  
Whether He shrinks at each ecstatic kiss,  
Or knowing how humanity is grieved,  
Knows too that it is better to give Hope  
Than Truth, if only one is in man's scope.

## ALPINE CHANT

I'm tramping thro the mountains,  
They are rising white around me,  
Snow peaks like patriarchs

That Winter has enthroned.

I'm tramping up the valleys  
Where the cataracts sound me  
Thunders they have shrilly

From eternity intoned.

I'm tramping thro the mountains,  
With the clouds for my companions,  
Soft clouds that float and cling

From crag to cloven crag.

I'm passing by the chalets  
That o'erhang the high cañons,

Passing where the shepherds  
And their fair flocks lag.

I'm tramping thro the mountains  
Where the pines in proud procession  
Climb like a hardy host  
To halo-heights of sun.  
I'm listening for the sallies  
Of the avalanche'—its Hessian  
Hurl of ice and granite  
Into gulfs Avernian.

I'm tramping thro the mountains  
And the wind is yodling to me  
Yearnings of the glaciers  
To flow to summer lands.  
I'm treading up the valleys  
With no wanting to undo me —  
For to-day I'm goalless  
And the great God understands!

## THE MAN OF MIGHT

No moment drooped between his thought and action,  
No morrow died between his dream and deed.  
Within his soul there was no fatal faction  
That could betray him in his hour of need.

## IN TIME OF AWE

The fierce sea-sunset over the world  
    Springs like a wounded spirit.  
And ships in the gray gale's lair have furled  
    Their sails — well may they fear it!

The night will be but a monstrous seethe  
    Of terrors elemental.  
And all the lives in the sea beneath  
    By fear shall be made gentle;

And sink down, down to the nether deeps,  
    Below the foam and fretting,  
Below the lonely wreck Death keeps  
    To guard him 'gainst forgetting.

And there in the ominous vast calm  
    They'll harbour fear-enchanted;

There float till again they feel the qualm  
Of hunger thro them panted.

And then once more far up will they spring,  
To drift and float and plunder.  
To the sea, O God, does horror cling,  
And haunting past all wonder.

## SUNRISE IN UTAH

The dun sand-cliffs that break the desert's sea  
Rose suddenly upon my sight at dawn,  
And terrible in an eternity  
Of death took silently the sunrise on.  
Purple funereal from rifted skies  
Swept down across their proud sterility.  
Only to die as here all glory dies,  
On barrenness I did not dream could be.  
O God, for a bird-song! or opening lips  
Of but one flower upon the fatal air,  
For but the voice of water as it drips,  
Or stir of leaves the day-wind makes aware!  
O God, for these, for life! or from the face  
Of the world wipe so irreparable a place!

## CONSOLATION

### I

Come to me, shadows, down the hill,  
Lie softly at my feet.  
The sun has worked his will  
    And the day is done.  
Come to me softly and distil  
Your dews and dreams, that heat  
And hours of heartless glare  
    Have overrun.

### II

Come to me, shadows, down the hill  
And bring with you the night,  
Fire-flies and the whippoorwill  
    And ah, the moon —



Whose soft interpretings can still  
The tongues of wrong and right,  
And tangled hopes and fears  
That haunt the noon.

## III

Come to me, shadows, down the hill —  
And let there follow Sleep, —  
God's ancient tidal Will  
That overflows  
The fretted world — effacing ill,  
And in its soothing sweep  
Murmuring more of mercy  
Than man knows.

## WAVES

The evening sails come home  
    With twilight in their wings.  
The harbour-light across the gloam  
    Springs;  
    The wind sings.

The waves begin to tell  
    The sea's night-sorrow o'er,  
Weaving within their ancient spell  
    More  
    Than earth's lore.

The rising moon wafts strange  
    Low lures across the tide,  
On which my dim thoughts seem to range,  
    Stride  
    Upon stride,

Until, with flooding thrill,  
They seem at last to blend  
With waves that from the Eternal Will  
Wend,  
Without end.

## VIS ULTIMA

There is no day but leads me to  
A peak impossible to scale,  
A task at which my hands must fail,  
A sea I cannot swim or sail.

There is no night I suffer thro  
But Destiny rules stern and pale:  
And yet what I am meant to do  
I will do, ere Death drop his veil.

And it shall be no little thing,  
Tho to oblivion it fall,  
For I shall strive to it thro all  
That can imperil or appal.

So at each morning's trumpet-ring  
I mount again, less slave and thrall,  
And at the barriers gladly fling  
A fortitude that scorns to crawl.

## MEREDITH

What am I reading? He is dead?  
He the great interpreter  
And seer — England's noblest head?  
What am I reading? It is hushed?  
The deepest voice that life had found  
To read a century profound  
With all time's seethe and stir?

Why, it is but a scanty score  
Of days, since, at his side,  
Clasping his hand with more than pride,  
I felt that the immortal tide  
Of his great mind would long break o'er  
The cold command of Death.  
Still in my ear is echoing

The surf of his strong words, and still  
Against the wild trees on the Hill  
His cottage sheltered under,  
I see the toss of his gray locks,  
Like Lear's — for he had felt the sting  
Of all too greatly giving  
The kingdom of his mind to those  
Who for it held him mad.

O England, guard thy living  
Like him from a like fate!  
For not the mighty thunder  
Of thy proud name from all the rocks  
Of all the world can compensate  
A nation whom no Song makes glad,  
And whom no Seer makes great.

This page in the original text is blank.



CHARLES DI TOCCA

FIRST PUBLISHED 1903

To  
MY WIFE

This page in the original text is blank.

# ACT I

## CHARACTERS

CHARLES DI TOCCA . . . . .	<i>Duke of Leucadia, Tyrant of Arta, etc.</i>
ANTONIO DI TOCCA . . . . .	<i>His Son</i>
HÆMON . . . . .	<i>A Greek Noble and Poet.</i>
BARDAS. . . . .	<i>His Friend</i>
CARDINAL JULIAN . . . . .	<i>The Pope's Legate</i>
AGABUS . . . . .	<i>A mad Monk</i>
CECCO . . . . .	<i>Seneschal of the Castle</i>
FULVIA COLONNA . . . . .	<i>Under the Duke's protection</i>
HELENA . . . . .	<i>Sister to Hæmon</i>
GUILIA . . . . .	<i>Serving Fulvia</i>
PAULA . . . . .	<i>Serving Helena</i>
LYGIA } . . . . .	<i>Revellers</i>
PHAON } . . . . .	
ZOE } . . . . .	
BASIL } . . . . .	

NALDO, *a Boy*, and DIOGENES, *a Philosopher*

*A Captain of the Guard, Soldiers, Guests, Attendants, etc.*

## ACT I

SCENE: *The Island Leucadia. A ruined temple of Apollo near the town of Pharo. Broken columns and stones, making breaches, are strewn or stand desolately about. It is night—the moon rising. ANTONIO, who has been waiting impatiently, seats himself on a stone. By a road near the ruins FULVIA enters, cloaked.*

*Antonio (turning).* Helen—!

*Fulvia.* A comely name, my lord.

*Antonio.* Ah, you?

My father's unforgetting Fulvia?

*Fulvia.* At least not Helena, whoe'er she be.

*Antonio.* And did I call you so?

*Fulvia.* Unless it is

These stones have tongue and passion.

*Antonio.* No; the night,  
 Recalling dreams of dim antiquity,  
 Was at some spell upon me. But whence are  
 Your steps, so late, alone?

*Fulvia.* From the Cardinal,  
 Who has but come.

*Antonio.* What comfort there?

*Fulvia.* A vain.  
 The moody bolt of Rome broods over us.

*Antonio.* My father will not bind his heresy?

*Fulvia.* You with him walked to-day. What  
 said he?

*Antonio.* I?  
 With him to-day? Ah, true. What may be done?

*Fulvia.* He has been strange of late and silent,  
 laughs,  
 Seeing the Cross; but softly and almost  
 As if it were some sweet thing that he loved.

*Antonio (looking off).* As if it— Pardon, he is  
 strange, you say?

*Fulvia.* Stranger than is Antonio his son,



Who but for some expectancy is vacant.

[*She moves to go.*

*Antonio.* Stay, Fulvia—I am so; but stay, listen.  
Last night I dreamed of you. In vain, it seemed,  
You strove to reach me out of swift Charybdis

[*A low cry. They start.*

*Fulvia.* A woman's voice!

[*Looking down road.*

And hasting here!

*Antonio (anxiously).* Alone?

*Fulvia.* No, with another.

*Antonio.* Then go, Fulvia.

Go, go! 'tis one who comes to speak with me.

[*She goes.*

[*Enter HELENA, frightenedly, with PAULA.*

My Helena, what is it? You are wan  
And tremble as a blossom quick with fear  
Of shattering. What is it?

*Helena.* Say not true!

Oh, say 'tis not!

*Antonio.* What have you chanced upon?

*Helena.* Say no to me, say no, and no again!

*Antonio.* Say no, and no?

*Helena.* Yes; I am reeling, wrung,  
With one glance o'er a precipice of ill!  
Say his incanted prophecies spring from  
No power that's more than frenzied fantasy!

*Antonio.* Who prophesies? Now, who upon this  
isle  
More than the visible and present day  
Can gather to his eye? Tell me.

*Helena.* The monk—  
Ah, chide me not!—mad Agabus—who can  
Unsphere dark spirits from their evil airs  
And show with them all things of love or death,  
Seized me as I stole to thee. With wild looks  
And wilder lips he vented on my ear  
Bodings more wild than both. "Sappho!" he cried,  
"Sappho! Sappho!" and probed my eyes as if  
Destiny moved dark-visaged in their deeps.  
Then tore his rags and moaned, "so young to  
cease!"

Gazed then out into awful vacancy,  
And whispered hotly, following his gaze,  
“The Shadow! Shadow!”

*Antonio (half-moved).* And then went his way?  
Doing no harm save with his superstitions?  
Why, be it then, my Helena!

*Helena.* But he  
Has often cleft the future with his ken,  
Seen thro it to some lurking mar of love,  
Or the dim knell of death heard and revealed.

*Antonio.* He has not! but is only a witless monk  
Who thinks God lives to fill his prophecies.

*Helena.* I would he were! But well you know  
'tis said  
In youth he loved one treacherous, and in  
Avenge has made fierce league with Hell that lends  
him  
Sight of all ills that rise to human hearts.—  
Yet look not so, my lord! I'll trust thine eyes  
That tell me love is master of all times—  
And thou of all love master!

*Antonio.* And of thee?

Then will the winds return unto the night,

[*Clasps her.*

And flute us lover songs of happiness!

*Helena.* Nor dare upon a duller note while here  
We tryst beneath the moon?

*Antonio.* My perfect Greek!

Anthene looks again out of thy lids,

And Venus trembles in thy every limb!

*Helena.* Not Venus! (*with new dread*) ah, not  
Venus!

*Antonio.* Now; again?

*Helena.* 'Twas at this temple's ancient gate she  
found

Wounded Adonis dead, and to forget,

Like Sappho leaped, 'tis said, from yonder cliff

Down to the waves' oblivion below!

*Antonio.* And will you read such terror in a tale?

*Helena.* Forgive me, then.

*Antonio.* Too quickly you're unstrung.

And yet—there is—

[*Troubled.*

*Helena.* Is what, Antonio?

*Antonio.* Nothing; I who must ebb with you and  
flow,

A little was moved.

*Helena.* Antonio? . . . Not you?

I'll change my tears to laughter, if a fancy  
May so unmettle—you!

*Antonio.* Well, let us off,  
My Helena, with these numb awes that wind  
About our joy.

*Helena.* Thy kiss, then; for it can  
Drive all gloom out of the world.

*Antonio.* And thine, my own,  
On Fate's hard brow would shame it of all frown!

*Helena.* Yet is thine mightier, for no frown  
can be

When no more gloom's in the world!

*Antonio.* Then no frown is!  
(*Teasingly.*) And yet—if I pressed other—

*Helena.* Other, my lord?

[*Stands from him.*]

You should not know that any other lips  
 Could e'er be pressed. I'll have no kiss but his  
 Who is all blind to every mouth but mine.

*Antonio.* Oh?—Well! . . .

*Helena.* “Oh, well!”—Then it is well

I go.

*Antonio.* Perhaps.

*Helena.* “Perhaps!”

*Antonio.* Goodnight!

*Helena (feigning).* Goodnight.

*Antonio (turning).* Still here?

*Helena.* There's gloom in the world again.

*Antonio (with a kiss).* Then now 'tis gone!

*Helena.* Not all, I think.

*Antonio.* Two for so small a gloom?

*Helena (closing her eyes).*

The vainest glooms to-night seem ominous,  
 As cloud-flakes flung upward before the west.

[*Suddenly starting,*

But who?—who comes?

[*Looks off.*

*Antonio.* Helena!

*Helena.* Agabus!

AGABUS *enters, unkempt, distracted.*

*Agabus.* O—lovers! lovers!—Lord have none of them!

*Antonio.* Good monk—

*Agabus.* Oh, yes, yes, yes. You'd give me gold  
To pray for your two souls. (*Crossing himself.*)

Not I! not I!

For know you not love's brewed of lust and fire?  
It gnaws and burns until the Shadow—Sir,

[*Searching about the air.*

Have you not seen a Shadow pass?

*Antonio.* A Shadow?

*Agabus.* Silent and cold. A-times they call him  
Death.

I'd have him for my brain—it shakes with fever.

[*Goes searching as before.* HELENA  
*is motionless.*

*Antonio.* There; he is gone.

*Helena.* Yes—gone.

*Antonio.* And you are calm?

*Helena.* Of impotence—as one who in a tomb  
Awakes and waits.

*Antonio.* He is but mad.

*Helena.* But mad.

*Antonio.* Yet fear you? still?

*Helena.* It is as if the earth  
Were wind under my feet. As if . . . Antonio!

*[A column she has leant against falls.*

*Her terror is greater.*

Antonio! see, see, it is fallen! . . . fallen!

*Antonio.* And if it has, are all things thus  
become

Omen and dread to you?

*Helena.* Oh, but it is  
The pillar grieving Venus leant upon  
Ere to forget she leaped—and lonely wrote,

“When falls this pillar tall and proud  
Let lovers weave their shroud.”

*Antonio.* Mere myth! a myth!  
You must not, Helena!





*Helena.* It cannot be! and you a god? I'll bow  
Before your eyes no more. Say that it can!

*Antonio.* Not yet—not now. For Hæmon is,  
we know,  
Suspicious and bitter—  
And must be won with service.

And you are Greek—a name I never heard  
Pass to my father's ear, till yesterday,  
But it came out his mouth headlong with curses.

*Helena.* Yet he has smiled upon me oft of late.

*Antonio.* My father? No—or smiling only  
dreamt  
And saw you not.

*Helena.* Then have you also dreamt!  
For he looked as do you, when, under the moon,  
You call me—

*Antonio.* I will call you so no more.

*Helena.* And why, my lord?

*Antonio.* Because, O Heart of me.  
Words, were they miracles of beauty,  
Could not reveal you—

More than a taper's ray the rim of night!

[*A pause.*]

*Helena.* And yet—

*Antonio.* And yet—?

*Helena.* I'll hold you not too false  
If sometimes they trip out upon your lips.

*Antonio.* Or to my father's eye?

*Helena.* If for thy sake.

*Antonio.* He smiled, you say?

*Helena.* As one forgetting pain.

[*They sit.*]

*Antonio.* Perhaps. For some unwonted softness  
seems

Near him. On yesterday he asked for song,  
Dancing and wine.

*Helena.* Then tell him! For we live  
In peril years, and secrecy must seem  
Yoke-mate of guilt!

*Antonio.* Fear has bewitched you, fie!

*Helena.* No: but love's wave, Antonio, has cast

Us high—and now I would do all lest—(*starting up*)

Paula!

[*Turns, fearful.*]

*Paula (who has approached from watching).*

My lady, some one comes.

*Helena.*

Who?

*Paula.*

I saw not.

*Helena.* Antonio! . . . if it were—Hæmon!

*Antonio (cloaking her).*

Wish it!

*Helena.* You'll wait him? Broodings smoulder  
in his moods,

Fevered and bitter.

*Antonio.* Kindness, then, shall quench them!

[*Kisses her.*]

But now, away. And lose this dread—to be

By day my lark, by night my nightingale—

Not a sad bird of boding!

*Helena.*

As I have?

*Antonio.* Remember, you are only a little stept  
From your life's shore, out on the infinite  
Of love—whose air is awe and mystery.

*Helena (going).* Think of me oft. At dawn all  
will be well.

*Antonio (seeing them off then turning quickly to watch).*  
My father it is! . . . And Hæmon with him?  
friendly?

[*Steps aside. Enter CHARLES and HÆMON.*

*Charles.* So! you will go no farther with me?

*Hæmon.* No,

Sir, if you'll grant it. I—

*Charles (twittingly).* Some rendezvous?

Who is she? Ah, young blood and Spring and  
night!

*Hæmon.* No rendezvous, my lord.

*Charles.* Some lay, then, you

Would muse on?

*Hæmon.* Yes, a lay.

*Charles.* And one of love?

The word, you see, founts easy to my lips.

(*Archly.*) 'Tis recent in my thought—as you will  
learn.

*Hæmon.* How, sir, and when?

*Charles.* Oh! . . . when? Be not surprised.  
Well, to the lay!

[*Goes.*

*Hæmon.* Yes, to the lay! while here  
He wastes the bread of honesty and age  
With bloody, drunken soldiery who lust  
To tear all innocence away and robe  
Our loveliest in shame! . . . While me, a Greek,  
He suddenly befriends.

*Antonio (stepping out).* Hæmon——

*Hæmon.* Ah! you?

*Antonio.* There's room between your tone and  
courtesy.

*Hæmon.* And shall be while I'm readier to bend  
Over a beggar's pain than prince's fingers.

*Antonio.* I think you know me better——

*Hæmon.* Than to believe  
You're not Antonio, son of Charles di Tocca?

*Antonio.* I'd be your friend.

*Hæmon.* So would he—and he smiles.

*Antonio.* There are deep reasons with me.

*Hæmon.* As with him!

A miracle, if you are not his heir!

*Antonio.* It would be well, I think, for you to  
listen.

My confidence once curbed—

*Hæmon.* May bite and paw?

And trample? Let it! . . . Go, and threaten  
cowards.

For were you Tamerlane and mine the skull

'To cap your bloody foes, I'd—!

*Antonio.* Still be blind?

*Hæmon.* To your fair graces? No, my lord,  
your sword

And doublet are sublimely worn, sublimely!

Your tresses, too, would tempt the fairest fingers.

*Antonio.* And yet my anger's silent.

*Hæmon.* Give it tongue, then,

And not this subtle pride,—as Bardas says.

You, you would be my friend? A friend to me?

Did not your father

Into a sick and sunless keep cast mine  
 Because he was a Greek—and still a Greek—  
 And would not be a slave? And has his power  
 Not whispered death about him as a pest?  
 He, for a friend? and you? and I on him  
 Should lean for succor?

*Antonio.* Yes. For tho' he's stained,  
 The times are tyrannous and men, like beasts,  
 Find mercy preservation's enemy.  
 And you are heated with a doubtful wrong.  
 But here's my hand as pledge—

*Hæmon (refusing it).* That you'll be false?

[*Enter* BARDAS.]

Or that . . . Bardas!

*Bardas (stops).* Hæmon, I've sought you. Ah,  
 And you, my lord. My way was to your door  
 With a request.

*Antonio.* Which gladly I will hear,  
 And, if I can, will grant.

*Bardas.* My haste is blunt—  
 As is my tongue.



*Antonio.* Then yield it us at once.

*Bardas.* At your command. Hæmon, I love  
your sister! [*Astonishment.*]

Not love! I am idolatrous before  
Her foot's least print and cannot breathe or pray  
But where she's sometime been and left a heaven!

*Hæmon.* And therefore you will cry it to the  
streets?

*Bardas.* Necessity's not over-delicate.  
So my request, my lord, is—sue for me.  
You have been apt in all love's skill, they say.  
Your words, sown on her ear,  
Would not lie fruitless tho' they bade her yield  
More than her most.

*Hæmon (flushing).* Bardas! . . .

*Bardas.* Hæmon! peace!

*Antonio, answer.*

*Antonio.* To this strange request?  
Helena, whom I've seen, would little thank  
The eyes that told her own where they should love.

*Bardas.* I saved your life, my lord.



*Antonio* (*amazed*). My father!

*Bardas*. Oh! well feigned.

Be sure none will suspect he is too old  
For knightly feat like this or that he has  
A son!

*Antonio*. To Helena! my father! sealed?

[*BARDAS turns away. A pause.*]

*Hæmon* (*clenched*). So it was there, my lord,  
your friendship moved?

*Antonio* (*to BARDAS*). Do you mean that—?

*Bardas*. Until this hour I thought  
The race of Charles di Tocca bold, or other—  
But empty of all lies in deed or speech.

*Antonio*. Then you are mad—mad! now to sus-  
pect it.

I'm naked of this thing and hide no guilt  
Either in word or wonder of my face.  
For paradises brimming with delight  
I would not lay one shadow weight of shame  
On her you name.

*Bardas.* A pretty protest—but  
A breath too heavenly.

*Antonio.* Then hear me say  
You have repaid yourself—cast on me words  
Less to be borne than treble loss of life.  
And know, that between Helena and shame  
I stand with flaming heart and fearless hand.

[*Strides angrily off, leaving them.*]

*Hæmon.* And is he false? wearing this mien of  
truth?

*Bardas.* I'll not believe him!

*Hæmon.* Helena was *seized*?

*Bardas.* For him who stands “with flaming  
heart” between!

Have we no flesh to understand this passion?  
Will he, bound to the wings of bold ambition,  
Choose her undowered worth?  
Into suspicion's fire I would not cast  
The fairness of his name; but doubts in me  
Are dumb with proof.

*Hæmon.* Full?

*Bardas.* And unfalterable.

*Hæmon.* He could not! he would dare not.

*Bardas.* Yet the rogue

Cecco, the duke's half-seneschal, half-spy,  
I passed upon the streets as I came here,  
O'ermuch in wine, and to a jade spouting  
With drunken mockery,  
' "Sweet Helena! Fair Helena!"—O wench,  
My eyes, but the Lord Antonio knows sound nuts!  
And sly! why, hear you now! he gets the duke—  
The duke to seize the maid! The fox! the rat!  
And hear now! have I not—not heard him—nights—  
Within his chamber, at his window, puffing  
Her name with drawls—as many honeyed drawls  
Of passion—as—as—as—as June has buds!  
'Sweet Helena! fair Helena!' he says.  
'My rose! my queen!—My sun and moon and  
stars!  
Thy lips, my Helena! thy arms! thy breast!  
Um, oh! a rare damsel! . . . I'll make ways  
Between her purse and mine, wench; do you hear?"

*Hæmon.* Well—well?

*Bardas.* No more. When I had struck him down  
He swore it was unswerving all and truth.  
Hasting to warn I found Helena gone—  
And sought you here.

*Hæmon (groaning).* Ah!

*Bardas:* Helena, who is  
All purity!

*Hæmon.* And all. . . . Ah, sister, child!

*[Choking.*

Have I been father, and with tenderness  
A mother been, to thy unfolding years  
But to see now unchastest cruelty  
Pluck the white bloom to ease his idle sense  
One fragrant hour?—If it is so, no flowers  
Should blossom, only weeds whose withering  
Can hurt no heart.

*Bardas.* And tears like these should seal  
Fierce oaths against him.

*Hæmon.* Fiercest! And they shall!  
God wreck him in the tempest he has raised!

*Bardas.* And may I be the rock on which he  
breaks

*[Shouts and laughter are heard approaching.]*

But who? . . . who comes? (*Looks off.*) Revel-  
lers.—Let us step  
Within this breach until their mirth is past.

*[They conceal themselves in the stones.  
The revellers enter, as bacchanals,  
dancing and singing:]*

Bacchus, hey! was a god, hei-yo!

The vine! a fig for the rest!

With locks green-crowned and lips red-warm—

The vine! the vine's the best!

He loved maids, O-o-ay! hei-yo!

The vine! a maiden's breast!

He pressed the grape, and kissed the maid—

The cuckoo builds no nest!

*[All go dancing, except LYDIA and PHAON,  
who clasps and kisses her passionately.]*

*Lydia (breaking from him).* Do you think kisses are so cheap? You must know mine fill my purse! A pretty gallant from Naples, with laces and silks and jewels, gave me this ring last year for but one. And another lover from Venice gave me this (*a bracelet*)—but he looked so sad when he gave it! Ah, his eyes! I'd not have cared if he had given me naught.

*Phaon.* Here, here, then! *[Offers jewel.*

*Lydia (putting it aside).* They say the ladies in Venice ride with their lovers through the streets all night in boats; and the very moon shines more passionately there. Is it true?

*Phaon.* Yes, yes. But kiss me, Lydia! Take the jewel—my last. But be mine to-night, no other's! We'll prate of Venice another time.

*Lydia.* Another time we'll prate of kisses. I'll not have the jewel!

*Phaon.* Not have it! Now you're turning nun! a soft and virgin, silly nun! With a gray gown to hide these shoulders, that—shall I whisper it?



*Lydia.* Devil! they're not! A nice lover called them round and fair last night. And I've been sick! And—I—cruel! cruel! cruel!

*[Revellers are heard returning.*

There, they're coming.

*Phaon.* Never mind, my girl. But you mustn't scorn a man's blood when it's afire.

*[Re-enter Revellers singing:*

Bacchus, hey! was a god, hei-yo! etc.

*[After which all go except ZOE and BASIL.*

*Zoe.* O! O! O! but 'tis brave! Wine, Basil! Wine, my knight, my Bacchus! Ho! ho! my god! you wheeze like a cross-bow. Is it years, my wooer, years? Ah!

*[She sighs.*

*Basil.* Sighs—sighs! Now look for showers.

*Zoe.* Basil—you were my first lover—except the Duke Charles. Ah, did you see how that Helena looked when they gave her the duke's command? I was like that once.

*[HEMON starts forward.*

*Basil.* Fiends, nymphs, and saints! it's come!  
tears in her eyes! Zoe, stop it! Would you have  
mine leak and drive me to a monastery for shelter?

*Zoe (sings sadly and absently):*

She lay by the river, dead,  
A broken reed in her hand—  
A nymph whom an idle god had wed  
And led from her maiden land.

*Basil.* Oh, had I been born a heathen!

*Zoe.* He told me, Basil, I should live, a great  
lady, at his castle. And they should kiss my hand  
and curtsey to me. He meant but jest—I feared—  
I feared! But—I loved him!

*Basil.* Now, my damsel—!

*Zoe (sings):*

The god was the great god, Jove.  
Two notes would the bent reed blow:  
The one was sorrow, the other love—  
Enwove with a woman's woe.

*Basil.* Songs and snakes! Give me instead a Dominican's funeral! I'd as lief crawl bare-kneed to Rome and mouth the Pope's heel. O blessed Turks with their remorseless harems!—Zoe!

*Zoe (sings):*

She lay by the river, dead:

And he at feasting forgot.

The gods, shall they be disquieted

By dread of a mortal's lot?

*[She wipes her eyes, trembles, looks at him and laughs hysterically.]*

Bacchus! my Bacchus! with wet eyes! Up, up, lad! there's many a cup for us yet!

*[They go, she leading and singing.]*

He loved maids, O-o-ay! hei-yo!

The vine! a maiden's breast! etc.

*[HÆMON and BARDAS look at each other, then start after them, terribly moved.]*

CURTAIN

This page in the original text is blank.

## ACT II

This page in the original text is blank.

## ACT II

SCENE: *An audience hall in the castle of CHARLES DI TOCCA, the next afternoon. The dark stained walls have been festooned with vines and flowers. On the left is the ducal throne. On the right, sunlight through high-set windows. In the rear heavily draped doors. A wine table with wines. Enter CHARLES, who looks around and smiles with subtle content, then summons CECCO, who enters.*

*Charles.* The princess Fulvia.

*Cecco.* She comes, sir, now.

*[Goes. Enter FULVIA, strainedly.]*

*Fulvia.* My lord, flowers and vines upon these walls,

That seem always to bear the memory

And mist of grief? What means it?

*Charles.* A grave thing  
They sprung, a greedy multitude, in the fields.  
Citron and olive by them were left hungry,  
So by the might that's in me they are quelled.

[*Smiles.*

Is it not well?

*Fulvia.* A magic dwells in flowers  
To waft me back to childhood. (*Takes some.*) Poor  
pluckt buds,  
If they could speak, like children torn from the  
breast.

*Charles.* Now, are you full of sighs and pity?

*Fulvia.* Yes;  
Of pity and—of doubt.

*Charles.* And what divides you?

*Fulvia.* This Greek—I do not understand.

*Charles.* Nor guess?  
You have not seen nor spoken to her?

*Fulvia.* No.

*Charles.* We'll have her. Cecco! (*Enter*



CECCO.) Say that we wait her here,  
 The lady Helena. [CECCO goes, bowing.  
 But you must know she's frightened, Fulvia.  
 Fearing her father found too deep a rest  
 Here in our care. Yet she has hope that holds  
 The tears still from her lids—for I've smiled on her—  
 Smiled as I passed—and she— Why do you cloud?

*Fulvia.* I would this were undone.

*Antonio.* Undone? Undone?  
 This that I crave?

*Fulvia.* Yes.

[Enter HELENA.

*Charles.* Greek—our Fulvia,  
 Who is as heart and health about our doors,  
 Has speech for you. And as I've business—

*Fulvia.* Go, go, my lord.

*Charles (going).* You will be brief?

*Fulvia.* As may be.

[Then alone with the girl, and moved.

Girl, child—

*Helena.* Why do you look upon me so?

*Fulvia.* You're very fair.

*Helena.* And was so free I thought  
The world brimmed up with my full happiness.

*Fulvia.* But find it is a sieve to all save grief?

*Helena.* If it is grief—and not a graver thing!  
For I am girt by emptiness that aches,  
Surrounds and whispers what I dare not think,  
Or see shaped forth!

*Fulvia.* Upon the morrow's face?

*Helena.* You look at me—I think you look at  
me—

As if—?

*Fulvia.* No, child.

*Helena.* Why am I in this place?  
Why bidden here?—You fear for me!

*Fulvia.* Fear?

*Helena.* Yes!

A dumb dread trembles from you sufferingly.

*Fulvia.* It is not fear—or, no!—has vanished  
quite,

Ashamed of its too naked idleness.

*Helena.* He cannot! will not!—Yet you feared!

*Fulvia.* Be calm.

Beauty is better so.

*Helena.* And best unborn.

For you can see great shadow reach at me,  
Yet lend no light!—By gentleness I pray you  
What said he?

*Fulvia.* Child—

*Helena.* Ah what! A moment's dread  
Brings age on us!—If not by gentleness,  
Then by the love that women bear to men,  
By happiness too fleeting to tread earth,  
I pray you tell the fear your heart so hides!

*Fulvia.* You are the guest of Charles di Tocca.

*Helena.* None!

For guests are bidden not commanded.—Where,  
Where can Antonio be gone! All day  
No token, quieting!

*Fulvia (quickly).* Antonio, girl?

[*Re-enter CHARLES.*

Antonio? is it true? . . .

*Charles (as they see him).* Truth, Fulvia—  
Has brewed more tears than lies. But why now  
does

It mated with Antonio's mere name

Prey so upon your peace?

*Fulvia.* My lord——

*Charles.* You falter?

No matter, now. (*To HELENA.*) But you, my fair  
one, put

More merriment upon your lips and lids.

And this— (*gives pearls*) upon the luster of your  
throat.

Hither our guests come soon. Be with us then,  
And at your beauty's best. Now; trembling so?

[*As she goes.*

Yet is the lily lovelier in the wind!

[*Is looking after her, musing.*

FULVIA *waits.*

*Fulvia (at length).* My lord——

*Charles.* Aih, Fulvia, as titles go.

*Fulvia.* My lord——

*Charles.* Twice—but I'm not two lords.

*Fulvia.* To-night

I think you are. But quench these jests.

*Charles.* In tears?

And groans? Where borrow them?

*Fulvia (turning away).* So let it be.

*Charles.* Why do you say so let it?—and as if  
Naught could again be well?

*Fulvia.* Ah!

*Charles.* Now you frown?

*Fulvia.* This hope you nurse, then, if it prove  
a pang

Of serpent bitterness.

*Charles.* To whom and why?

I for an "if"—but that!—must pluck it from me?

*Fulvia.* So I believe.

*Charles.* Pluck, pluck it from me! . . . Will  
you,

Now will you have me mouth and foam and thresh

This quiet in me to a maelstrom?—This

Is mine, this joy, and still is mine—though I

To keep it must bring on me bitterness  
And bleeding and . . . I rage!

*Fulvia.* That I may cease?  
And say no more?—No, you are on a flood  
Whose sinking may be rapid down to horror.  
And she—this girl! It has been long since you  
Gave licence rein upon your will, and spur.  
Do not so now.

*Charles.* Licence?

*Fulvia.* She is all morn  
And dream and dew. Make her not night!

*Charles.* You think—!

*Fulvia.* Wake her not, ah, not suddenly on ter-  
ror!

*Charles (laughing).* O-ho!

*Fulvia.* You have laughed nobler.

*Charles (ceasing).* Upon terror?  
Friend of my unrepaying years, do you,  
Who know that I in empire youth forgot,  
Not know as well how now the presage-dew  
Of nearing age upon my brow can shake me?

*Fulvia.* I—did not, but have waited oft such words.

*Charles.* Ah, what! This hope, this leaping in me, this

White dawn across my turbulence and night,  
From licence? . . . Hear me: I have sudden found  
A door to let in Heaven on my heart.

Had I not laughed to see your dread write on it,  
“Licence” . . . perilous had been my frown.

*Fulvia.* Then you—?

*Charles.* Yes! yes! About her brow shall curl  
The coronet! Her wishes shall be sceptres  
Waving a swift fulfillment to her feet!  
Her pity shall leave ready graves unfilled,  
Her anger open earth for all who offend!  
She shall——

*Fulvia.* Ah, cease, infatuate man. Will you  
Build kingdoms on the wind, and empires on  
A girl's ungiven heart?

*Charles (slowly).* . . . Unto such love  
As mine all things are given.

*Fulvia.* All things but love.

*Charles.* Then . . . then . . . what meant her  
pleading—as unto

Her cheeks came hurried roses from her heart?  
And her large eyes, did they not drift to mine  
Caressing?—yet as if in them they found  
The likeness of some visitant dear dream?

*Fulvia.* The likeness of some *dream*?

*Charles.* Question no more.

She is set in the centre of my need  
As youth and fiercest passion could not set her.  
Supernally as May she has burst on  
My barren age. Pain, envious decay,  
And doubt that mystery wounds us with, and wrong,  
Flee from the gleam and whisper of her name.

*Fulvia.* And if your coronet and heat avail  
Not with her as might charm of equal years—  
And beauty?

*Charles.* Then, why then—why—there may slip  
An avalanche of raging —and despair—  
Out of me! Hope of her once taken, all



The thwarted thirsting of my want would rush  
Into the void, with lightnings for revenge!

[*Enter ANTONIO.*

With lightnings! . . . lightnings! . . .

*Antonio (bowing).* Sir; I am returned.

*Charles.* Boy—you? My eyes had other thought  
—and blacker.

Open your news; but mind 'tis not of failure.

*Antonio.* We seized the murderous robbers as  
you bade,

And o'er the cliff, as our just law commands,  
To death flung them.

*Charles.* So with all traitors be it.

*Antonio.* So should it.

*Charles.* Well, 'twas swift. In you  
there is

More than your mother's gentleness.

*Antonio.* Else were

My name di Tocca, sir, and not myself.

*Charles.* You have my love.—But as you came  
met you

The Cardinal?

*Antonio.* So close, he should by this  
Be at our gates.

*Charles.* He'll miss no welcome. And—  
Perhaps—we shall—(*smiles on them*). Give me  
that cross you wear,  
My Fulvia; it may—

*Antonio.* Sir, this is good!  
We earnestly beseech of you to hear  
The Pope's ambassador with yielding.

*Charles.* Ah?  
Then you, boy, draw out of this solitude  
You late are sunken in. You should think but  
On silly sighs and kisses, rhymes and trysts.  
Must I yet teach your coldness youth?

[*Stir at the gates.*

Draw out!

*Antonio.* I have desired some words of this to-  
day.

*Enter CECCO.*

*Charles.* Well, fellow, who—?

*Cecco.* The Cardinal, your Grace.

*Charles.* Then bid our guests. And bring Diogenes,

Our most amusing raveler of all  
Philosophies. Say that the duke, his brother,  
Humbly desires it. And stay, in her chamber  
Is—lady Helena.

*Antonio (starting).* My lord!

*Charles.* Well, what, boy?

[*When CECCO is gone, to FULVIA.*

Do you perceive him there, my Fulvia,  
We must look to this callow god, my son,  
For had our court two eyes to drown his heart,  
I'd give good oath—a goodly, it were done.

[*Goes to throne.*

*Fulvia (to ANTONIO).* You heard? No word of  
Helena!

*Charles.* Now, secrets?

*Fulvia.* He scorns me, sir, a drop of confidence  
On my too thirsty questions.

*Charles.* Does he so  
Tightly seal up his spirits?

*Fulvia.* Put the rogue  
To prison on stale bread, my lord. I half  
Believe he's full of treasons!

*Charles (laughing).* And may spill?  
You hear, sir? Though you are a son and loved,  
Justice is not impossible upon you.

[*The guests enter, among them HÆMON  
and BARDAS, who follow the CARDINAL  
JULLAN and his suite; then, last, HEL-  
ENA, whom FULVIA leads aside.*]

*Julian.* Peace, worthy duke!

*Charles.* And more, lord Cardinal.  
I would to-day enlarge my worthiness  
With you and with great Rome.

*Julian (bows).* Whose cause I bear,  
And hope in. [Sits.]

*Charles.* Then, here unto all our guests,  
I humbly disavow my heresies—

For faith's as air, as ease to life—and seek  
 At your absolving lips release from all  
 Rough disobedience. Nor shall I shun  
 The lash and needed weight of penitence.

*[A murmur of approval.]*

*Julian.* These words, great lord, fall wise and  
 soothing well.

Who so confesses plants beneath his foot  
 A step to scale all impotence and wrong.  
 Our royal Pope's conditions shall be read,

*[Motions SECRETARY, who advances.]*

Pledge them consenting seal and you shall be  
 Briefly and fully free.

*Charles (to SECRETARY).* We'll hope. Begin.

*Secretary (opening and reading):*

“Whereas the Duke di Tocca, of these isles  
 And Arta, has offended”——

*Julian.* Pass the offence.

Be it oblivion's. The penalty.

*Secretary.* “Therefore the Duke di Tocca, humbling himself  
Must pay into our vaults two hundred ducats”——

*Charles.* It shall be three.

*Secretary.* “And send an hundred men  
Armed, at the foes that threaten Italy.”

*Charles.* We will, Antonio, and ere the dawn.

*Secretary.* “He must also yield up the princess  
Fulvia,  
Who fled her father’s house and rightful marriage.”

[*All start, and look at CHARLES.*

*Fulvia (to JULIAN).* You told me not of this—  
no word, my lord!

*Julian.* My silence, as my speech, is not my own.

*Charles.* Ha?—We will hear a measure more.  
Read on.

*Secretary.* “And for the better amity and weal  
Of Italy and Christ’s Most Holy Church,  
He is enjoined to wed with Beatrice—

[*Commotion.*

Of Florence. And if boldly thus he grants

Obedience, his sins shall melt to rest—  
Under the healing calm of full forgiveness.”

*Charles.* A mild . . . a courteous, Oh, a modest  
Pope!

I must tear from my happiness a friend  
Who fled a father's searing cruelty,  
And cast her back in the flames. And I must bind  
My crippled years that fare toward the grave  
In the cold clasp of an unloving hand.

. . . . No! . . .

So, sir and Cardinal, 'tis not enough.  
I pray you swift again to Rome and plead  
Most suppliantly that I for penance may  
Swear my true son is shame-begot; or lend  
My kin to drink, clean of its fouling damp,  
Some pestilent prison! And 'tis impious, too,  
That any still should trust my love. Beseech  
His Holiness' command for death upon them!

*Julian.* This is your answer?

*Charles (rises).* A mite! a mite of it!  
The rest is, I will wed where I will wed

Though every hill of earth raise up its pope  
To bellow at me infamous damnation!

*[Is convulsed.]*

I—I—will—I—

*Fulvia.* Charles! ah! wine for him—wine!

*[Runs to him.]*

*Antonio.* Lord Cardinal, spare yourself more  
and go.

*[Brings wine. . . . JULIAN goes.]*

*Charles.* I—I will—I—! *(falls back)*. Off, off  
my throat! *(recovering)*. He's gone?

You, Fulvia? . . . it seemed a fiend swung on me.

A fiend of wrath who would have driven me . . .

But no . . . *(To the guests, calmer.)* Forgive,  
friends, this so sudden wrench

Upon your pleasure. One too quick made saint

Stands feebly. And I will atone at once.

Where is Diogenes—where is he? . . . Ay!

His tangled skein of wisdom shall divert us.

*[DIOGENES, who has stood heedless of all,  
is pushed forward.]*



Ah, peer of Socrates and perfect Plato,  
 Leave your unseeing silence now and tell us—

[*Enter* AGABUS.]

Who's this?

*Agabus (gazing)*. Where went he—the Shadow?  
 whither? the Shadow?

*Charles*. Who's this broke from his grave upon  
 us?

*Agabus (searching still)*. Whither?

I followed him—he sped and there was cold!

Behind him blows a horror! (*Suddenly*.) Ah,  
 upon her!

[*Stops awed before Helena*.]

His touch! . . . his earthless finger! . . . and she  
 rots!

*Antonio*. Vile monk!

*Agabus*. To dust! to dust!

*Antonio (seizing him)*. Are there no men,  
 That you must wring a woman so with fear?

*Agabus.* Ha, men? Christ save all men but  
lovers! all!

*[Crosses himself.]*

*Charles.* Antonio, what speaks he?

*Antonio.* Sir, he's mad  
With a pestilence of evil prophecy.

*[To guards.]*

Forth with him.

*Charles.* Stay. I'll hear him for myself.

*[To AGABUS.]*

Come hither, friend. So. Now, why do you gaze?

*Agabus (who has gone to CHARLES and stares  
with suppressed excitement).*

A lover! a lover! and he loves in vain.

Come, go. There is a cave—*(takes his hand)*.

We'll curse her—come!

*Charles.* Out! out!

*[Strikes him.]*

*Agabus.* Christ save all men but . . .

Ah, the Shadow!

*[Seeks vacantly.]*

Has no one seen him? none?—the Shadow? none?

[*Goes, dazed. The guests whisper, awed.*  
*A moment's silence.*

*Charles.* He is obsessed—vile utterly!

*A Guest.* Sir, yes.

But I must go.

*Another.* And I, my lord.

*A Third.* And I.

*Charles.* Friends, no, you shall not—no. This  
pall will pass.

My hospitality is up; you shall not.

*A Lady.* Nor we, O duke?

*Charles.* Nor you. A grudging wind  
Blows us away from mirth, but 'tis in view.

We've lute and dance that yet shall bring us in.

*2d Lady.* Oh, dance!

*Charles.* Cecco, our Circes from the Nile.

[*CECCO goes.*

*3d Lady.* The Nile? ah, Cleopatra's Nile?

*Charles.* Her own.

And sinuous as Nile water is their grace!

*[Enter two Egyptian girls, who dance, then go.*

*Guests (applauding).* O bravely! brave!

*Charles.* Do they not whirl it well?

With limbs like swallow wings upon the blue!

*1st Lady.* 'Twas witchery!

*2d Lady.* Such eyes! such hair!

*3d Lady.* And thus,

Did Cleopatra thus steal Antony!

Wrap him about with motions that would seize

His senses with an ecstasy! Oh, oh!

To dance so!

*Charles.* And so steal an Antony?

We'll frame a law on thieving of men's hearts!

*2d Lady.* Then, vainly!—'tis a theft men like  
the most.

*Charles.* When in its stead the thief has left her  
own.

But shall we woo no boon of mirth save dance?

A lute! a lute! (*One is sought.*) Some new lay,

Hæmon, come!

But every word must dip its syllables  
In Pindar's spring, to trip so lightly forth.

*Hæmon.* I have no lay.

*Charles.* The lute! (*It is offered.*)

Sing us of love—

That builds a Paradise of kisses, thinks  
The Infinite bound up in an embrace.  
Of love! whose sighs are hurricanes of pain,  
Whose tears are seas of molten misery.

*Hæmon.* I have none—cannot.

*Charles.* Now, will you fright off  
Again our timid cheer?

*Hæmon.* While she, my sister—!  
[*Refuses.*]

I cannot! will not.

*Charles.* Will not? will not? . . . Look!  
I had an honor pluckt to laurel it,  
A wreath of noble worth, a thing to tell—

*Hæmon.* Honor upon dishonor sits not well.

*Charles (not hearing).* Heat me not with denial.

Is new bliss

Raised from the dead in me but to fall back  
 As stone ere it has breathed? . . . Now is it, is  
 it?

Be slow, I say, to tempt me. In me moves  
 Peril that has a passion to leap forth.

*Hæmon.* Antonio! speak then! where is inno-  
 cence?

And where deceit?

*Fulvia (low to him).* Ask it not, or you step  
 On waiting hazard and calamity.

*Charles.* New fret? . . . and new confusion?  
 In the blind

Power and passing of this light is there  
 Conspiracy!—plot of some here? or of  
 That One whose necromancy wields the world?  
 I care not!—I care not! We must have mirth!  
 Have mirth! though it be laughter at damned souls.

*Hæmon.* And I must wake it? I, with laugh and  
 lay

Doting upon dishonor?

*Charles.* What means he?

*Hæmon.* Give me again my sister from these walls.

Since might is yours, strip from me wealth and life  
And more and all!—but let her not, no, no,  
Meet here the touch and leprosy of shame!

*Charles (laughing).* Said I not friends, my friends, we should have mirth?

You shall laugh with me laughter bright as wine.

*Antonio.* But, sir, this is not good for laughter—sir!

*Hæmon (to ANTONIO).* Ah, put the lamb on—bleat mock sympathy!

*Charles (still laughing).* Fulvia, oh, he foots it in the tracks

Of your own fear, and wanders to delusion!

*Hæmon.* Will you laugh at me, fiend!

*Charles.* Boy?

*Hæmon.* Had I but

Omnipotence a moment and could dash

Annihilation on you and your race!

[*Strikes ANTONIO.*]

*Helena.* Hæmon!

*Fulvia.* Helena, back!

*Charles.* Omnipotence?

And could Omnipotence make such a fool?

There must be two gods in the world to do it.

*Hæmon.* She shall not—!

[*Attempts to kill HELENA.*

*Antonio (preventing it).* Fury! Fury! . . .

What would you do?

*Charles.* Can such things be? A sister, yet he strikes?

[*HÆMON is seized.*

*Helena.* Oh, let me speak to him, sir, let me speak!

*Charles.* Not now, girl, no, not now—lest in his breath

Be venom for thee! (*To the guard.*) Shut him without our gates

Till he repent this fever. (*To the guests, who shrink.*) If you stare so

Will the skies stop! Have I not arm in arm



Friended this youth—and meant him honor still?

[HÆMON *is led out.*

Leave me. I had a thing to tell, but it

Must wait more seasonable festivity.

(*To PAULA.*) See to your mistress, child. Antonio,  
stay.

[*All go but ANTONIO and CHARLES, who  
leaves the throne slowly.*

*Antonio.* Father—

*Charles (unheeding).* Did I not humble me?

*Antonio.* Sir—?

*Charles.* Did

I ask more than a brevity of joy

To bud on my life's withering close?

*Antonio (anxiously).* Sir, sir!

*Charles.* If it bud not—!

*Antonio.* What thought is it that wrings  
These angers from your lips?

*Charles (slowly, gazing at him).* You're like  
your mother.

*Antonio.* In trouble for your peace, more than  
in feature.

*Charles.* Peace—peace? Antonio, a dream has  
come.

To stir—to wake—to learn it is a dream—

I must not, will not look on such abyss.

You love me, boy?

*Antonio.* Sir, well; you cannot doubt it.

*Charles.* There has been darkness in me—and  
it seems

Such night as would put out a heaven of hopes,

Quench an eternity of flaming joy.

I have sunk down under the world and hit

On nethermost despair, flown blind across

An infinite unrest!

*Antonio.* Forget it now.

*Charles.* Had I drunk Lethe's all, 'twould not  
have stilled

The crying of my desolation's want.

Within me tenderness to iron turned,

Gladness to worm and gloom. But 'tis o'erpast.

A rift, a smile, a breath has come—blown me  
From torture to an ecstasy!

*Antonio.* Sir?

*Charles.* To

Such ecstasy as sways Hyperion's sun,  
Or Pleiads sweeping seven-fold the night.

*Antonio.* And this breath—is?

[*Chokes.*

*Charles.* How! . . . You are pale and press  
Your lips from trembling.

*Antonio.* No—yes—well—This breath?  
This ecstasy?

*Charles.* Is love! a love for . . . ! But—  
You feign! distress and groaning do tear in you!

*Antonio.* No. She you love—?

*Charles.* O Eve new-burst on Eden,  
All pure with the prime beauty of God's breath,  
Was not so!

*Antonio.* She is Helena?—the Greek?

*Charles.* Helena! whom you've seen! Who—  
But you are

Not well and cannot share this ravishment.

I will not ask it now.

This ravishment!—Ah, she has stayed the tread  
And stilled the whispering of death; has called  
Echoes of youth from me, and all I feared. . . .

I think you are not well. Shall we go in?

*[Takes his arm. They turn.]*

**CURTAIN.**

## ACT III

This page in the original text is blank.

### ACT III

SCENE: *The gardens of the castle. Paths meet under a large lime-tree in the centre, where seats are placed. The wall of the garden crosses the rear, and has a postern. It is night of the same day, and behind a convent on a near hill the moon is rising. A nightingale sings.*

*Enter* *GUILIA, CECCO, and NALDO.*

*Guilia.* That bird! Always so noisy, always vain  
Of gushing. Sing, and sing, sing, sing, it must!  
As if nobody else would speak or sleep.

*Cecco.* Let the bird be, my jaunty. A tale tells  
That nightingale and shrew were never friends.

*Guilia.* No more were shrew and serpent.

*Cecco.* Well, what would  
You scratch from me?

*Guilia.* If there is anything  
To be got from you, then it must be scratched.

*Cecco.* Yet—shrews do not scratch serpents.

*Guilia.* When they're caught  
Where they can neither coil nor strike?

*Cecco.* Well, I  
Begin to coil.

*Guilia.* And I'll begin to scotch you  
Ere it is done.—Give me the postern key.

*Cecco.* Your lady's voice—but you are not your  
lady.

*Guilia.* And were I, you not long would be your  
lord's.

Give me the key.

*Cecco.* I coil! I coil!

*Guilia.* And soon  
You will be ready for a strike? Pah, then—!  
Does the duke know you've hidden from his ear  
Antonio's passion? (*Cecco starts.*) Does he?—

Ah! and shall  
I tell him?—ah?



*Cecco.* You know it?

*Guilia.* He likes well  
What's kept so thriftily.

*Cecco (scowling).* You want the key  
To let in Boro to chuck your baby face  
And moon with you! He's been discharged—take  
care!

*Guilia.* The duke might learn, too, you're not  
clear between  
His ducats and your own.

*Cecco.* There, then (*gives key*). But—

*Guilia.* Oh?  
And shrews do not scratch serpents?—You may spy  
But others are not witless I can tell you!

[*CECCO goes.*

Now, Naldo—(*hands him key and writing*) do not  
lose the letter. But  
Should you, he must not come till two. For 'tis  
At twelve the Greek will meet Antonio.

[*NALDO goes through the postern; GUILIA  
to the castle.*

*Enter HELENA and PAULA from another part of the  
gardens.*

*Helena.* At twelve, said he, at twelve, beside the  
arbor?

*Paula.* Yes, mistress.

*Helena.* I were patient if the moon  
Would slip less sadly up. She is so pale—  
With longing for Endymion, her lover.

*Paula.* Has she a lover? Oh, how strange! Is it  
So sweet to love, my lady?—I have heard  
Men die and women for it weep themselves  
Into the grave—yet gladly.

*Helena.* Sweet? Ah, yes,  
To terror! for the edge of fate cares not  
How quick it severs. . . .

*Paula.* On my simple hills  
They told of one who slew herself on her  
Dead lover's breast. Would you do so?  
Would you, my lady?

*Helena.*                                 There's no twain in love.  
My heart is in my lord Antonio's  
To beat, Paula, or cease with it.

*Paula.*   Though he  
Died far away?

*Helena.*                                 Far sunders flesh not souls.  
Across all lands the hush of death on him  
Would sound to me; and, did he live, denial,  
Though every voice compassionless should speak it  
I should not hear.    But he is near!

*Paula.*   Oh, no,  
Not yet, my lady.

*Helena.*                                 Then some weariness  
Has pluckt the minutes' wings and they have crept.

*Paula.*    It is not twelve—else would we hear the  
band  
Of holy Basil from their convent chant.

*Helena.*    Nay; hearts may hear beyond the hark  
of ears.

His step thrills thro' the earth—into my breast!

[*The postern opens.*]

'Tis he! go, Paula, go. But sleep not.

*Paula.*

No.

[*Goes.* ANTONIO *enters.*

*Helena.* Ah, my Antonio, I breathe again  
Now that I know betiding has not fallen  
To stay thee from me.

*Antonio.* Stronger than all betiding  
This hour has reached and drawn me yearning to  
thee! [Takes her in his arms.

*Helena.* So may all hours!

*Antonio.* All! . . . though we  
two will still

Be more than destiny—which cannot grasp  
Beyond the grave.

*Helena.* 'Tis sadly put, my lord.

*Antonio.* Sadly—and loathly! But, my Hel-  
ena——

*Helena.* I would not sink from it, the happy sun,  
Fade to a tomb! . . .

What dirging hast thou heard to mind thee of it?

*Antonio.* Love is a bliss too bright to dwell on  
earth.

With it God should give us ever to soar  
Above mortality.

*Helena.* And above—fear?—  
But no! tell me not yet! dimly I see  
The burden in your eyes, but dare not yet  
Take it into my own. Let us a little  
Look on the moon forgetting—the pale moon!

[*They sit.*

*Antonio (musingly).* These hands—these—and  
this hair—!

*Helena.* Like a farewell  
Your touch falls on them.

*Antonio (moved).* To a father yield them?

*Helena.* Antonio?

*Antonio.* No, no! it cannot be,

*Helena.* This dread, then, and this shrinking—  
let me have it!

You mean—look on me—mean your father—?

*Antonio.*

Ah!

It must not!

*Helena.* But you mean—you mean he—No!  
Let him not touch me even in thy thought,  
To me come nearer than a father may!

*Antonio.* He's swept by the sweet contagion of  
you, wrapt  
In a fierce spell by your effulgent youth.

*Helena.* Say, say it not! To him I but smiled  
up—  
But smiled!

*Antonio.* And he knew not such smiles could  
dawn  
In a bare world! And now is flame, would take  
Your tenderness into his arms and hear,  
Seized to him, the warm music of your heart.  
Oh, I could be for him—he is my father—  
Prometheus stormed and gnawed on Caucasus,  
Tantalus ever near the slipping wave,  
Or torn and tossed to burning martyrdom—  
But not—not this!

*Helena.*                    Then, flight! In it we may  
Find haven and new nurture for our bliss.

*Antonio.* And from his hunger snap this hope,  
so he  
Must starve? Push him who has but learned  
there's light

Back into yawning blindness?—No!

*Helena.*                    Then what?—

I know he is your father, and my days  
Have been all fatherless, though I have made  
Me child to every wind that had caress  
And to each lonely tree of the deep wood—  
Oft envious of those who touch gray hairs,  
Or spend desire on filial grief and pang.  
I know, too, you have kept a softness in him,  
Been to him more than empire's tyranny—  
But baffled none can measure him, or trust.

*Antonio.* Yet we must wait.

*Helena.*                    When waiting shall but goad  
The speed of peril?

*Antonio.* Still; and strain to win  
Him from this brink. If vainly, then birth, pity  
And memory shall fall from me! all, all,  
But fierceness for thy peace!

*Helena.* My Antony!

*Antonio.* A fierceness without falter!

*Helena (in his arms).* I am thine!  
Thine more than immortality is God's!  
Hear, does the nightingale not tell it thee?  
The stars, do they not tremble it? the moon  
Murmur it mystically into thine eyes?

*Antonio.* Ah, sorceress! You need but breathe  
to put  
Abysm from us; but build words to float us  
On infinite ecstasy.

*Helena.* The where thy kisses  
Sing in me!

*Antonio.* They but send thee from my heart  
Echoes born of thy beauty mid its strings.

*Helena.* Then would I lean forever at thy lips,  
Lose no reverberance, no ring, no waft,



Hear nothing everlastingly but them.

[*A mournful chant is borne from the convent. . . . They unclasp and listen, awed.*]

*Antonio.* Weary with vigil does it swell and sink,  
Moaning the dead.

*Helena.* Ah, no! there are no dead  
To-night in all the world. Could God see them  
Lie cold and wondrous still, while we are rich  
In warmth and throb?

*Antonio.* Yet, hear. The funeral tread  
Of the old sea sighs in each strain and breaks.

*Helena.* As I were drowned and heard it over me,  
It cometh! . . . As . . . as if I were drowned.

[*Her head droops back on his arm.*]

*Antonio* (*starting and touching her face*).

Helena! You are cold! . . . your lips! your  
brow!

And pale . . . pale as with a prophecy.

*Helena.* Oh—oh!—

*Antonio.* Your spirit . . . is not in you—but  
Afar and suffering! . . .

*Helena.* A vision sweeps me.

*Antonio.* Awake from it!

*Helena (recovering).* A waste of waves that beat  
Upon a cliff and beat. Yet thou and I  
Had place in it.

*Antonio.* Come to yon arbor, come.  
The moon has looked too long on the sad earth,  
And can reflect but sorrow.

*Helena.* Oh! I fear!

[*They go, clinging passionately together.*

*Enter CHARLES and CECCO.*

*Charles.* And yet it is a little thing to sleep—  
Just to lie down and sleep. A child may do it.

*Cecco.* If my lord would, here's sleep for him  
wrapped in  
A quiet powder.

*Charles.* Sleep is the mate of peace  
And ever should go with it. I have slept

In the wild arms of battle when the winds  
Of souls departing fearfully shook by,  
Or on the breast of dizzy danger cradled  
Have soft been lulled. Potions should be for them  
Who wrestle and are thrown by misery.

*Cecco.* And is my lord at peace?

*Charles.* Strangely. Yet seem  
For sleep too coldly calm.

*Cecco.* So were you, sir—  
I keep your words lest you may need of them—  
On the same night young Hæmon's father found  
A secret way—to death!

*Charles (darkly).* Which . . . you dare  
name me?

*Cecco.* Pardon, I but—

*Charles.* Smirker!—Yet was it so?  
That night indeed

*Cecco.* Sir, surely.

*Charles.* And the moon  
Hung in the east, stainless, even as now?

*Cecco.* Sir, half, even as now.

*Charles (as to himself).* Since that hour's close  
 To this I have not stood in so much calm.  
 Still, was he not in every vein of him,  
 And breath, a traitor? A Greek who,—I'll not  
     say it.

Since she is Greek I must forget the word  
 Is diapason to all perfidy.

*Cecco.* My lord thinks of the lady Helena?

*Charles.* And if I do?

*Cecco.*                   Why, sir—

*Charles.*                   Well?

*Cecco.*                   Nothing. But—

*Charles.* Subtle! your nothing bulges with some  
     theft

Of spial.

*Cecco.* Sir—I—no—that is—

*Charles.*                   That is—

It does! . . . Must I persuade it from your throat?

*[Threatens to choke him.]*

*Cecco.* It was of Lord—Antonio—

*Charles.* Speak, then.

*Cecco.* Have you not marked him sundry of his  
moods?

*Charles.* Well?

*Cecco.* On his back in the woods, as if the leaves  
Sung fairy balladry; then riding wild  
Nowhither and alone; about the castle  
Yearning, yet absent to soft speech and arms!—  
He'll drink, sir, and not know if it be wine!

*Charles.* So is he; yet this morning he un-  
sheathed

His skill and bravery.

*Cecco.* And did not crave  
A boon of you?

*Charles.* None. But you put my thought  
Not ill to it. His aspiration flags.

*Cecco.* Ah, flags?

*Charles.* New wings it needs and buoyancy.  
My trust in him is ripe. For fruit of it,  
He shall be lord of Arta—total lord.

*Cecco.* He begged no softer boon?

*Charles.* Cunning! again?

Sleek questions of a sleeker consequence?

*Cecco.* It was, sir, only of Antonio——

*Charles.* Worm, you began so. Stretch now to  
the end,

Or—will you?

*Cecco.* I would say—would ask—and hope

There is no thorny hint in it to vex you,

May he not be—— (*low*)

Amorous, mellow-sick, upon some maid?

*Charles.* Have you so labored to this atom's  
birth?

Is a boy's passion so new under the moon

You gape at it?

*Cecco.* But if, sir——

*Charles.* I had thought

Woe was your ending—some Titanic woe

No human catapult could war upon!

Some dread colossal doom frenzied to fall!

And had it been he's traitor to my throne,

Or ready with some potent cruelty

To blight this tenderness new-sprung in me,  
I should—even have listened!

[Starts.

But . . . a step?

[The postern is softly opened—to admit

HÆMON.

*Charles* (confounded—as HÆMON stops, pale).  
Keys? you?—to this? Keys! and a guilty stealth?

*Hæmon.* I have excuse.

*Charles.* A-hoh!—And to my gems  
And secrecies, a better? Shall I not  
Reveal their hiding? rubies and fair gold?

[CECCO steals off.

*Hæmon.* Mistake me not, my lord.

*Charles.* I could not, sir!  
You come at midnight—a most honest hour!  
Enter this postern—a most honest way!  
And seem most honest! Then . . . how could I,  
sir?

*Hæmon.* You wrong me and have wronged me.

I but come  
To loose my sister.

*Charles.* As to-day you would?  
With an imperious piercing, into death?

*Hæmon.* Rather, Antonio, could I! Yet now,  
neither.

Since you, not he, are here, my passion melts  
Into a plea. Humbly as manhood may—

*Charles.* This fever still?

*Hæmon.* This fever! Must I be  
As ice while soiling flames leap out at her?  
Be passionless—as one cold in a trance?  
Rigid, while she in stealth is drugged to shame?  
Be voiceless, and be vain, unstung, and still?  
I must wait softly while her innocence  
Is drained as virgin freshness from the morn?  
Tho' he were twice Antonio and your son,  
An emperor and a god, I would not! . . .

*Charles (staring).* Ever,  
And ever bent upon Antonio?—



Be not a torrent, boy, of rush and foam.

Be not; ha, no. Yet—look: Antonio?

You said Antonio?

*Hamon.* Yes.

*Charles (troubled).* Then you did ill  
To say it! He is my son.

*Hamon.* I care not.

*Charles.* Have  
You cause—a ground—some reason? Men should  
when  
Suspicious curve their lips.

*Hamon.* Ah, reason!

*Charles.* No  
He is my son. His flesh has memories  
That would cry out and curdle him to madness.  
Palsy and strangle every pregnant wish,  
Or bring in him compassion like a flood.

*Hamon (contemptuously).* Oh—?

*Charles.* Then—what reason? What?...

[*A voice is heard off.*]

*The Voice.* My lord! my lady!

[*They start. PAULA enters hurriedly.*

*Paula.* My lord Antonio! my lady! (*seeing CHARLES*). O!

*Charles (strangely).* Come here.

*Paula.* O, sir!

*Charles (taking her wrist).* Were you not in a haste?

*Paula.* I—I—I do not know.

*Charles.* Girl!—Why do you then Drop fearful to your knees?

*Paula.* 'Tis late, sir, late.  
Let me go in!

*Charles.* You have a mistress who Keeps quick temptation in her eyes and hair.  
A shy mole, too, lies pillowed on her cheek.  
Does she rest well?

*Paula.* My lord——

*Charles.* Ah, so? most well?  
But sometimes walks asleep? and you have come  
To fetch her?

*Paula.* Loose me, sir!

*Charles.* Or she has left  
Her kerchief in some nook; you seek it?

*Paula.* Oh,  
Your eyes! your eyes!

*Charles.* I have a son . . . are his  
Not like them?

*Paula.* Sir, my wrist!

*Charles.* It was—at night, then?  
You could not see him clearly?

*Paula.* Mercy!

*Charles (looking about).* Yet  
Perchance he, too, walks in his sleep. Were it  
Quite well if they have met, these two that walk?

*Paula.* My lady, my sweet lady!

*Charles (releasing her).* Go, for she  
Still wonderful may lie upon her couch,  
One arm dropt whitely.—If you prayed for her—  
If you should pray for her—something may chance:  
There is so much may chance—we cannot know.

[PAULA goes.]

So much we cannot know! for even this child,  
Who serves about her, swathing up her hair,  
Has might too much!

*Hamon.* My lord! o'er whom? You fog me.

*Charles.* Be still.

*Hamon.* Antonio?

*Charles.* Can I not think,  
"Helena," but you link "Antonio" to it?  
Can they not be, yet be apart? Will winds  
Not bear them and not sound them separate!  
If angels cry one at the stars, will they  
But echo back the other?—This is froth—  
The froth and fume of folly. You are thick  
In falsity and in disquietude.  
Another rapture rules Antonio's eye,  
Not Helena.

*Hamon.* And you know it, yet lead  
Her to his arms?

*Charles.* No! mole, who burrow so  
Under a blind and muddy misbelief!  
To mine is she come here . . . and only mine!

And were he a seraph who from Paradise  
 Desired to fold her —were—ay!—were he . . .  
 No mercy!— But, I will speak as a child;  
 As he who woke with Ruth fair at his feet.  
 Long have I gleaned amid the years and lone:  
 She shall glean softly now beside me, softly,  
 Till sunset fail in me and I am night.

*Hæmon.* This is a gin, a net, and I am fast.

*Charles.* A net to snare what never has been free?

*Hæmon.* It must be—all! For tenderness lives  
 false

Upon your lips.

*Charles.* Though you live still who say it?

*Hæmon.* Then . . . shall he rest, lie easy down  
 and rest

In treachery?

*Charles.* Who?

*Hæmon.* Ah!

*Charles.* Antonio?

*Hæmon.* Is it not clear? Is it not open?

*Charles (confusedly).* No.

*Hæmon.* This maid who called—did she come  
idly here?

By chance?

*Charles.* Yes.

*Hæmon.* And did I, at a strange hour?

*Charles.* Say on.

*Hæmon.* And have I entered a strange way?

*Charles.* You pause and ever pause upon my  
patience!

'Twill heave unbearably!

*Hæmon.* Then hear the whole.

Senseless against a bank I found a boy,  
Hurl'd by some ruthless hoof. Near him this key  
And writing—that avers—

*Charles.* On, on!

*Hæmon.* Mid lines,

Clandestine of purport, Antonio

And Helena under these shades at twelve—

*Charles.* Enough! This brings a furious deso-  
lation!

Go: call me Fulvia.

*Hæmon.* Not there is trust!  
She is aware and aids in this deceit.  
This writing says it of her.

*Charles.* Fulvia? No!  
No, no! . . . Though she had sudden whispers for  
him!

A lie! . . . Yet fast belief fixes its fangs  
On me and will not loose me: for against  
My hope she set a coldness and a doubt!  
O woman woven through all fibres of me!  
(*Starting up.*) But he—!

*Hæmon.* Ah, then, you can remember, can—  
With pangs that answer mine?

*Charles (quietly).* They still may be . . . !

*Hæmon.* Under these shades?

*Charles.* And lips to lips!

*Hæmon.* My lord!  
You see at last?

*Charles.* Hush! something. No, it was  
But fate cried out in me, not any voice.

*Hæmon.* We must be swift.

*Charles.* It cries again. I will  
Not listen! He's not flesh of me—not flesh!  
A traitor is no son, nor was, nor shall be!  
Though it shriek desolation utterly  
I will not listen!

*Hæmon.* Do not.

*Charles.* And to-day  
He shook, ashen and clenched, remembering  
The guilty secret in him!

*Hæmon.* He! who's free.

*Charles.* My words fell warm as tears—"A rift  
has come,  
A rift, a smile, a breath"—men speak so when  
They've crept from madness up into some  
space  
Whose element is love.

*Hæmon.* Then will you sink  
Now to a palsy? you who should o'erwhelm  
With penalty?

*Charles (rousing).* No! all and ever false  
Is he who's so when most he should be true!



I will make treachery bitter to all times!  
 Bring dread on all to whom are given sons.  
 Down generations shall they peer and tremble,  
 Look on me as on majesties accursed!—  
 Search every shade—search, search! You stand as  
 death.

I am in famine till he give me groans.

*[They go in opposite directions. FULVIA  
 enters, distrest, with GUILIA.]*

*Fulvia.* He was with Hæmon?

*Guilia.* On that seat.

*Fulvia.* Convulsed?

Yet passionless?

*Guilia.* His words were low.

*Fulvia.* Why were

You not asleep?

*Guilia.* I—

*Fulvia.* Did he pace the path

Peacelessly as he said it?

*Guilia.* I was behind—

*Fulvia.* And could not see? But heard their  
names from him?

The Greek is still without?

*Guilia.* My lady, yes.

*Fulvia.* Your voice is guilty. How came Hæ-  
mon in?

Answer me, answer. No, go quickly, go,

Learn if the duke has entered. If he has not—

*[Words and swords are heard, then a  
shriek from HELENA. CHARLES rushes  
in, furious, a wound in his arm. He  
is followed by HELENA, ANTONIO, who  
is dazed; and from the castle by HÆ-  
MON, CECCO, the guards, etc.]*

*Antonio.* Sir! father! you? . . . I knew it not,  
so swift

Your rage fell on me.

*Charles (to Guard).* Gaping, ghastly fool!

Do you behold him murderous and lay

No hand on him!

*Antonio.* But, sir—!

*Charles.* Let him not fawn  
About me! Seize him! God forgives not Hell.  
Not this blood only but my soul's be on him.

*Helena.* Oh, do not, he—!

*Charles.* Stand! stand! Touch me not with  
Your voice or eyes or being! They are soft  
With perfidy, and stole me to believe  
There's sweetness in a flower, light in air  
And beauty in the innocence of earth.  
Bind him! Leucadia's just cliff awaits  
All traitors . . . 'tis the law, they must be flung  
Out on the dizzy and supportless wind.

*Fulvia.* But this shall never be! No . . . though  
your looks  
Heave out with hate upon me.

*Charles (convulsed, then coldly).* You are dead,  
And speak to me. Once you were Fulvia—  
No more! And once my friend . . . now but a  
ghost  
Whom I must gaze upon forgetlessly.

[*To GUARDS.*

Obey, at once! And at to-morrow's sunset.

[ANTONIO *is seized and led out.*

*Helena* (at CHARLES'S feet). You cannot, will not! . . . Oh, he is your son—

And loves you much!

*Charles.* Touch me not! touch me not!

(To HÆMON.) Lead her away—and quickly, quickly, quickly!

[HÆMON *obeys.*

Friends, friends?—(*clutching his wound*). I am quite friendless now! . . . Ah—quite!

[*Faints.*

*Fulvia.* Charles! ah! my lord! return! return!

(*down by him.*) A numbness

Has barred the war of soothing to his breast!

CURTAIN.

## ACT IV

This page in the original text is blank.

## ACT IV

SCENE: *A chamber in the castle, opening on the right to a hall, curtained on the left from another chamber. In the rear is a window through which may be seen silvery hills of olive resting under the late afternoon sun; by it a shrine. Chairs, etc. Enter the CAPTAIN of the GUARD and a SOLDIER from the hall.*

*Soldier.* There is no more?

*Captain.* Not if you understand

*Soldier.* That do I—every link of it! I've served  
Under the bold de Montreal; and he,  
For stratagems—well, Italy knows him!

*Captain.* You must be quick and secret.

*Soldier.* As the end  
Of the world!

*Captain.* Our duty's with the duke. But then Antonio has our love.

*Soldier.* That has he! Ah,  
That has he!

*Captain.* Well, be close. None must escape,  
Remember, none be hurt. As for the princess,  
We'll hear the chink of ducats with her thanks.

*Soldier.* Madonna save her!—The Judas of a  
father

Who robs her rest! (*Listens.*) She comes!

*Captain (looking down hall).* Yes, it is she.  
So go, and haste. But fail not.

*Soldier.* If I do  
Bury me with a pagan, next a Turk!

[*Goes.*

*Enter FULVIA.*

*Captain.* Princess—

*Fulvia.* Our plans grow to fulfilment—are  
No way misplanted?



*Captain.* Lady, all seems now  
Seasonable for their expected fruit.

*Fulvia.* No accident appears to threaten them?

*Captain.* Doubt not a fullest harvest of your  
hope.

The duke himself shall for this deed at last  
Have benediction.

*Fulvia.* May it be! He's quick—  
Though quicker in forgetting. I will move  
Him as I may.

*Captain.* The kind and wise assaults  
Your words shall make must move him, gracious  
lady.

*[Is going.]*

*Enter HÆMON.*

*Hæmon.* I seek the duke.

*Fulvia (dismissing CAPTAIN).* You would seek  
penitence

Were you less far in folly.

*Hæmon.* Oh—if he's

Not here——

*Fulvia.* Regretting, too, would strain your lips,  
Not cold defiance.

*Hæmon.* Pardon. If you know,  
Where is he?

*Fulvia.* Was it easy to o'erwhelm  
Under the ruins of her dreams, a sister?

*Hæmon.* Better beneath her dreams than under  
shame.

*Fulvia.* Your rashness cloaks itself in that ex-  
cuse,  
Your ruth, and your suspicion that has doomed  
One innocent.

*Hæmon.* Fa! innocent. His thought  
Had but betrayal for her.

*Fulvia.* 'Tis the Greek  
In you avows it, no true voice.

*Hæmon.* Then 'tis  
My father murdered, whose last moan I hear

Driven about me in this castle's gray  
Cold spaces. And the dead speak not to lie.

*Fulvia.* But to admonish, do. So you in vain  
Are braving with the spur of this belief.

*Hæmon.* What do you want of me?

*Fulvia.* This: and at once.  
An ache, a restlessness are on you—

*Hæmon (impatiently).* No.

*Fulvia.* And doubt begins in you, that as a wolf  
Will scent the wounded quarry of your conscience.

*Hæmon.* After he lured and wooed her under  
night  
And secrecy?

*Fulvia.* Not running there will you  
Escape its dread pursuit.

*Hæmon.* He frauded, duped  
His father's trust!

*Fulvia.* Or there! But one refuge  
Have you against its bitter ceaseless tooth,  
And that above the wilds of self-deceit.

[*A pause.*]

*Hæmon.* No refuge can be from an hour that's  
gone.

Shall we invert the glass or tilt the dial  
To bring it back?

*Fulvia.* But if there were?

*Hæmon.* Where is  
The duke? I will not bauble.

*Fulvia.* If there were?

*Hæmon.* I will no longer listen to the worm  
You set to feed upon me, torturing.  
The sun melts to an end, and with the night  
Antonio will not be.

*Fulvia.* Yet there is time.

*Hæmon.* The duke is fixed.

*Fulvia.* And I. Against the lurch  
And power of this peril we must lean.

*Hæmon.* When?

*Fulvia.* Now.

*Hæmon.* You have a plan?

*Fulvia.* One that is sure.

[*Steps are heard.*]

But one for wisdom. So, for more seek out  
The captain of the guard. I wait the duke.

[HÆMON goes through the curtains.

CHARLES enters worn, dishevelled,  
with CECCO. . . . Sees FULVIA and  
pauses.

*Fulvia.* I come to plead.

*Charles.* Ah, Nature should have pled  
With her, your mother—against conception; go!

[*Moves off.*

*Fulvia.* Your trust is causelessly withdrawn.

Yet for

A breath again I beg it—for a moment!

*Charles.* A moment were too much—or not  
enough.

Is trust a flower of sudden birth, we may  
Bid bloom with a command?

*Fulvia.* Ah, that it were,  
Or bloomed as amaranth in those we love,  
Beyond all drouth and withering of ill!—  
But, hear me—

*Charles.* Leave these words.

*Fulvia.* Will you not turn  
Out of this rage?

*Charles.* Leave them, I say, and cease!  
Still down the vortex of this destiny  
I would not have you farther drawn.

*Fulvia.* Then from  
It draw yourself!

*Charles.* Myself am but a hulk—  
Whose treasures have already been engulfed.

*Fulvia.* Yet shrink from it!

*Charles.* A son, a friend, a—No,  
She was not mine!—I will not turn.

*Fulvia.* It is  
Your fury that distorts us into guilt.  
For tho' Antonio will not crush his heart,  
But flings you stony and unfilial speech,  
Fearing for her—

*Charles.* Leave!

*Fulvia.* We—

*Charles.* Thrice I have said it!

*Fulvia.* Yet must I not until your will is wasted.

*Charles.* Ah! (*Sits.*) . . . Cecco!

*Cecco.* My lord?

*Charles.* The hour?

*Cecco (at the window).* It leans to sunset.

[*FULVIA goes.*

*Charles.* The sky—the sky?

*Cecco.* A murk moves slowly up.

*Charles (wearily).* There should be storm . . .  
gloating of wind and grind

Of hopeless thunders. Lightnings should laugh out  
As tongues of fiends. . . . There should be storm.

[*His head sinks on his breast.*

(*Suddenly.*) Yet!—yet!—

*Cecco.* My lord—?

*Charles.* The glow and glory of her seem  
Dead in me!

*Cecco.* Of the Greek?

*Charles.* And yearning has  
Grown impotent—as would an ash of folly,

A left and quickly quenched desire of youth  
Kindled in me!—To youth alone love's sudden.

*Cecco.* Sir, dare I speak?

*Charles.* Speak.

*Cecco.* When Antonio—

*Charles.* Cease; but a whisper of his name and I  
Am frenzy—frenzy—though the stillness burns  
And bursts with it!

[*CECCO steps back.*]

The sun, how hangs it now?

*Cecco.* Above the bloody waving of the sea,  
Eager to dip.

*Charles (staggering up).* Ah, I was in a foam—  
Bitten by hounds of fury and despair!  
Did you not, Fulvia, pleading for them, say  
They quailed but would not flee and leave me  
waste?

*Cecco.* She is not here, my liege.

*Charles.* Antonio!

Boy, boy! Thou ever wast to me as wafts  
Of light, of song, of summer on the hills!



Soft now I feel thy baby arms about me,  
And all the burgeon of thy youth, ere proud  
And cruel years grew in me, comes again,  
On wings and stealing winds of memory!

*Cecco.* Oh, then, sir——

*Charles.* Yes. Fly, fly! and stay the guard!  
He must not—ah!—down fearful fathoms . . .  
down

Into the roar!

[*CECCO starts—he stops him.*

Yet me he has flung from  
Immeasurable peaks and I have sunk  
Forevermore beneath hope's horizon.  
Who falls so close the grave can rise no more.

[*A silence.*

*Cecco.* This your despair would wound him  
more than death.

Forget the girl.

*Charles.* She? . . . Ah, my sullen, wild  
And gloomy pulse beat with a rightful scorn

Against the hours that sieged it. Stony was  
 Its solitude and fierce, bastioned against  
 All danger of quick blisses . . . till with fury  
 For that mute tenderness which women's love  
 Lays on the desolation of the world,  
 She ravished it!—and now has left it cold.

*Cecco.* As it should be, sir. And remember she  
 Moved you unknowingly.

*Charles.* A woman's smile  
 Never was luring, never, but she knew it,  
 As hawk the cruel rapture of his wings.

*Cecco.* She though is young and youth—

*Charles.* Must pay with moan  
 And shriving!—Go; the sun—the sun—where  
 burns it?

*Cecco (at the window).* Upon a cloud, whence  
 it must spring to night.

*Charles.* So low?

*Cecco.* Sir, yes.

*Charles.* It is? so low?

*Cecco.* Red, now.  
It rushes forth.

*Charles.* A breathing of the world.  
And then—! Antonio!

*Cecco.* Again a cloud  
Withholds it.

*Charles.* Boy—my boy!

*Cecco.* It dips, my lord!

*Charles (frenzied).* Ah, will great Christ upon  
it lay no fear!

Let it sink down as if its swooning sent  
No signal unto death—and plunge, plunge thee,  
Antonio, forever from the day!  
Has He no miracle to seize it yet!  
Nor will not lend his thunder to cry hold,  
His lightning to flame off the hands that grasp,  
Bidden to hurl thee o'er?

*Cecco.* 'Tis sunk!

*Charles (rushing to window).* Yes!—yes!  
(*Starting back horrified.*) The vision of it! Ah,  
see you not, see?

They lift him, swing him—now! down, down,  
down, down!

The rocks . . . the lash! . . . the foam!

[*Sinks exhausted in his chair. CECCO  
pours out wine.*

*Enter hurriedly a SOLDIER.*

*Soldier.* Great lord!

*Cecco.* Fellow, what now? be gone!  
what now?

It is ill-timed.

*Soldier.* Great lord, there's mutiny!

*Cecco.* And where?

*Soldier.* Hear me, great sir, there's mutiny!

*Cecco.* Within the town?

*Charles (rousing).* Ay—?

*Soldier.* Mutiny! your haste.

*Charles.* Oh—mutiny.

*Soldier.* Sir, yes!

*Charles.* And do the ranks  
Of Hell roar up at me?— It is not strange.

*Soldier (confused).* The ranks of—? Pardon,  
lord.

*Charles.* Do the skies rage?  
They were else dead to madness.

*Soldier.* Sir, it is  
Your guard beyond the gates.

*Charles.* 'Tis every throat  
Of earth and realm unearthly has a cry  
Against me and against!

*Soldier.* No; but a few—!

*Charles.* You doubt it?—Are my eyes not  
bloody? Say!

*Soldier.* Sir! sir!

*Charles.* My lips, are they not pale  
with murder,  
Bitterly done?

*Soldier.* Pale—no.

*Charles.* Yet—I have killed;  
Spoke death with them; not reasonless—yet death.  
And all the lost have echoes of it; hear  
You not a spirit clamor on the air?

Ploughing as storms of pain it passes through me.  
 Mutiny? . . . Go. I could call chaos fair,  
 And fawn on infinite ruin—fawn and praise.

[SOLDIER *goes.*

Yet will not yield! (*To CECCO.*) My robes and  
 coronet!

[CECCO *goes.*

I'll sit in them and mock at greatness that  
 A passion may unthrone. If we weep not,  
 Calamity will leave to torture us,  
 And fate for want of tears will thirst to death.

[*Enter* JULIAN.

Ah, priestly sir.

*Julian.* Infuriate man!

*Charles.* Speak so.

I lust for bitterness.

*Julian.* What have you done!

*Charles (shuddering, then smiling).*

Watched the sun set. Did it not, think you, bleed  
 Unwontedly along the waves?

*Julian.* Oh, horror!

Horrible when a father slays and smiles!

*Charles.* Not so, Lord Cardinal, not so!—but  
when

He slays and smileth not.

*Julian.* Beyond all mercy!

*Charles.* Therefore I smile. Men should not  
mid the trite

Enchanting and vain trickery of earth,

Till they no longer hope of it or want.

Smiles should be kept for life's unbearable.

*Julian.* Murderer!

*Charles.* Ah!

*Julian.* Heretic!

*Charles* (*goes to shrine*). Well?

[*Casts shrine out of window.*]

*Julian.* Fool! fool!

*Charles.* There are no wise men, O Lord Car-  
dinal!

*Julian.* Heaven let Antonio's death under the  
sea

Make every wave a tongue against your rest,





*Fulvia.* But shall.

*Charles.* To Rome?

*Fulvia.* Do not pause here to learn  
With the dear minutes of a dying man.

[JULIAN goes.]

*Charles.* You baffle and bewilder me. . . . You—?  
yes! . . .

I am beat off by it.

*Fulvia.* Ten years of shelter  
You have held over me.

*Charles.* Ten years—

*Fulvia.* Whose days,  
Whose every moment else had been a torture.

*Charles.* Now—?

*Fulvia.* I, perhaps, must go.

*Charles.* Must? . . . still I grope.

*Fulvia.* Must go! . . . Though in this castle's  
aged calm

And melancholy dusk no shadow is  
Or niche but may remember prayer for you.

*Charles.* To Rome? . . . You must? . . . I am  
under a spell.

*Fulvia.* We, you and I, after the battle's foam  
Or chase's tired return, have often breathed  
The passionate deep hours away in rest  
And sympathy.

*Charles.* So; oft. But, on—I marvel—!

*Fulvia.* And at the dawn have looked and  
sighed, then slow  
With quiet clasp of fingers turned apart.

*Charles.* Unto calm days. But in your tone I  
feel—

*Fulvia.* Have we not fast been friends?

*Charles.* What hath your voice?

*Fulvia.* Such friends have we not been as grow  
up from  
Eternity?

*Charles.* You say it—and I wake.

*Fulvia.* E'er such . . . until last night within  
the garden  
You changed as the sea changes under storm.

*Charles.* I had forgot!—forgot! . . . the sun!  
the sea!

The sea!—Antonio! . . . The cliff—the surf!  
The shroud and funeral fury of the waves!

*Fulvia.* Be calm.

*Charles.* I'll stay it!

[*Up, excitedly.*]

Cecco! our fleetest foot!

A rain of ducats if he shall outspeed  
This doom to us. More! more! a flood of them,  
If he—

*Fulvia (reseating him).* Be patient—calm.

*Charles.* I—I—remember:

'Tis night!

*Fulvia.* Yes, night.

*Charles.* The sun's no more. It hath  
Gone down beyond all mercy and recall.

*Fulvia.* Perhaps.

*Charles (quickly).* Fulvia? . . .

*Fulvia.* It is hard to think!

*Charles.* You utter and he seemeth still of life!

*Fulvia.* He was a child in mimic mail clad out  
When first this threshold poured its welcome to me.

*Charles.* Softly you muse it . . . and call to  
your eyes

No quailing nor a flame of execration.

You do not burst out on me? from me do

Not shrink—as from an executioner?

*Fulvia.* I am a woman who in tears came to  
Your strength; in tears depart.

*Charles.* And will not judge?  
But fear me! fear, and flee? . . . You shall not go.

*Fulvia.* Perhaps.

*Charles.* Again you hide behind  
“perhaps”?

To Rome?—I say you shall not.

*Fulvia.* Yet should he,  
Antonio, from those curtains come——

*Charles.* Should—should?  
You speak not reasonably. Why do you say  
“If he should come?” because . . .? There is no  
reason . . .!

You've led me trembling from reality.

Those curtains?—those?—just those? . . . You shall  
not go.

*Fulvia.* I will not, then.

*Charles.* But something breaks from you,  
And as an air of resurrection stirs.

Speak; on your words I wait unutterably.

*Fulvia.* Did not a soldier lately come, my lord,  
Breathless, with eager speech of mutiny?

*Charles.* He did.

*Fulvia.* Within your guard.

*Charles.* No—yes. The guard?  
What do I see yet cannot in your words?

*Fulvia.* The mutiny was raised at my com-  
mand—

*Charles.* Say it, say all!

*Fulvia.* To save you the mad blot  
Of a son's blood.

*Charles.* Antonio—?

*Fulvia.* Lives! . . . He lives!

*Charles (staggering back).* Low . . . low! . . .

Joy come too furious is frenzy.

He lives?—You have done this? with these soft  
hands,

These little hands, held off the shears of fate?

Have dared? and have not feared?

*Fulvia.*

Your danger was

My fear—that, and no more.

*Charles (with joy).* He lives? . . . I have

No deed to answer this! no gratitude,

No gift, no worth, no glow, no eloquence

But would sound poor in richest words of earth.

He lives?— Years yet are mine. Too brief they'll  
be

To muse with love of this!

*Fulvia.*

No, no, my lord.

*Charles.* But where is he? Belief, tho' risen in  
me,

Strains as if fast enfolded still in cerements

That seeing must unbind.

*Fulvia.* Then turn and see..

[ANTONIO *steps from the curtains.*

*Charles.* Antonio!—boy, boy!

*Antonio (as they embrace).* My father! . . .

*Re-enter JULIAN.*

*Julian.* Princess,

If your decision and desire are still—

[*Sees ANTONIO.*

*Fulvia.* Your eyes look upon flesh, lord Cardinal.

[*A cry is heard, then weeping.*

*Antonio (startled).* Whose pain is that? . . .  
strangely it hurts me—strangely!

*Enter CECCO, disturbed.*

*Cecco.* My lord, the lady Helena's little maid—

[*Sees ANTONIO. Shrinks from him.*

*Antonio.* What of her? Are you horrified to  
stone?

Her maid? . . . There are than risen dead worse  
things—

And worse to dread!—her maid?

*Cecco.*

Sir—

*Antonio.*

Forth with it!

Has she revealed some direness to her mistress?

That earth has opened and abysed her up?

Or butterfly or bud turned asp to bite her?

*Cecco.* Sir—she—the maid—craves audience  
with the duke.

*Antonio.* Fetch her, and quickly.

[*CECCO goes.*

*Fulvia.*

Reason, Antonio.

[*In suspense.*

She'll only whimper, tell what overmuch

Of grief her mistress makes for you, of tears

Your sunny safe returning will dry in her!

*Antonio.* These hours come not of any good, but  
are

Infected with resolved adversity.

This dread—!

*Fulvia.* They ever dread who have but quit  
The shadow of some doom—and the dismay.



[*Re-enter CECCO, with PAULA weeping.*]

*Antonio.* Girl, girl? Your mistress?

*Paula (shrinking).* Oh!

*Antonio.* I am no ghost.

Your mistress?

*Paula.* Mary, Mother!

[*Sinks praying.*]

*Antonio (lifting her up).* Look on me. See!

I have not been down in the grave, nor even

A moment beyond earth. Do you not hear?

*Paula.* Sir!

*Antonio.* Tell me.

*Paula (hysterically).* Go to her, oh, go to her!

*Antonio.* But, child—?

*Paula.* She, oh! go seek her, oh, she is—

*Antonio.* Where, Paula?

*Paula.* Blind all day she moaned and wept—

*Antonio.* My Helena!

*Paula.* And when the sun was gone,  
Came quiet, kissed me. . . . Oh, go seek her, sir!

*Antonio.* Kissed you—?

*Paula.* Then to me gave these jewels. Oh!  
And darkly cloaked stole out into the night.

*Charles.* Alone?

*Antonio.* Whither, quick, whither?

*Paula.* Ah, I do  
Not know, but she——

*Antonio.* Pray, pray, tell out your dread.

*Paula.* Last night she said “my heart is in my  
lord

Antonio’s to beat or cease with it.”

I learned her words—they seemed so winning.

*Charles.* Ah! . . .

*Antonio (dazed).* Why do you gasp?—Paula—

*Charles.* If she . . . the cliff!

*Antonio.* The cliff! The—?

[*Staggers dizzily, then rushes out.*

*Charles.* Let one go with him, bring  
Us what hath passed.

*Cecco.* Sir, yes.

[*Goes.*

*Paula (with uncontrollable terror).* My lady!

*Charles.* Child,

I cannot bear thy voice upon my heart!

It hath a tone—a clutch— No more, no more!

I cannot bear it! We must wait. No hap

Has been—no hap, I think—surely no hap.

*Enter BARDAS, deprecatingly, followed by ANTONIO.*

*Bardas.* Not in the sea, Antonio? You live?

*Antonio.* I say, where is she?

*Bardas.* You are mortal?

*Antonio (groaning with impatience).* Oh,

This utter superstition! (*Pricking his arm.*) Is it  
not blood?

*Bardas.* You live? and live? But let her think  
your death?

You've let her! here devising for yourself

Safety and preservation?

*Antonio.* She's not safe?

*Bardas.* Ha, safe—if she had shrift.

*Charles (hoarsely).* The dead are so!

*Bardas.* Ay, so.

*Antonio.* And none above the grave? . . . no answer?

*Bardas.* She came unto the cliff amid her tears.  
Her being all into one want was fused,  
You down the wave to follow.

*Antonio.* But you grasped—?  
You held her?

*Bardas.* Yes.

*Antonio.* Then? well?

*Bardas.* She had a phial.

*Antonio.* God! God!

*Bardas.* Out of her breast she drew it swift,  
And instant of it drank.

*Antonio.* A little? all?  
No, no!—no! but you dashed it from her lips?  
She did but taste?

*Bardas.* Only; and then——

*Antonio.* More? more?

*Bardas.* “Is’t not enough,” she pled to me,

“Enough

That I must wander the cold way of death

Unto his arms? Leave me! There is no rest.  
I will go down and clasp him, drift with him  
To some unhabited gray ocean vale  
God hath forgot. There we will dwell away  
From destiny and weeping, from despair!"

*Antonio.* But you still held her?

*Bardas.* Still; her hand in mine.

But revellers came and saw us—jested her  
Of taking a new love!—She broke my grasp—

*Charles.* And leapt! on the wide air?

*Bardas.* Swifter than all  
Prevention.

*Antonio.* Helena! . . . my Helena!  
Has all thy loveliness so fared to this,  
Thy glory gone in dark calamity?

*Bardas.* I saw her as she leapt, and until death  
Shall see no more.

*Antonio.* Nor may you, may you, ever!

[*Distractedly.*

But may her sorrow and her fairness stand

Imprisoned in your eye, to haunt and cry  
Relentlessly this crime.—But no; but no.

*[Turns blindly, swaying with grief, and  
passes out.]*

*Paula.* Let me go to my lady!

*Charles.* Still her! she  
Forever hath a fluttering, a cry  
Unbearable. It presses the lone air  
With sensitive and aching agony.

*Paula (witlessly, in tears).* I know thy song, my  
lady, I know, I know!  
'Twas pretty and 'twas strange, but now I know.

*[Sings*

Sappho! Sappho!  
In maiden woe  
(Let alone love, it spurns and burns!)  
Wept, wept, and leapt—  
O love is so!  
(Let alone love, it burns!)

My lady! oh, my lady! my sweet lady!

[*She is led out.*

*Fulvia.* This is most sad—most sad and pitiful.

*Charles.* I cannot bear her voice upon my heart.

[*AGABUS enters, gazing.*

And now this monk? this dog of death? he—now?

*Agabus.* My trusty Shadow! (*madly.*) Ha, he  
has been here!

My king of the worms and all corruption!

(*Approaches Charles.*) Lovers and lovers! Oh,  
she leapt as 'twere

To Christ and not sin's Pit! . . . And he has gone  
To follow her!

*Fulvia.* My lord!

*Agabus.* To follow her.

[*Wanders about.*

The devil's nine wits are too many.

*Fulvia (staring).* Oh!

[*Then seeing CHARLES rigid.*

Never an end? . . . but . . . now . . .  
more?

(*To him.*) Move, rouse, my lord! . . .

It is not truth but madness that he speaks.

[*A cry and clanking of armor are heard  
without. A SOLDIER bursts into the  
chamber—and sinks to his knees.*

*Soldier.* O duke! O duke!

*Charles (gazing at him).* Rise—go—and if thou  
canst—

To pray.

*Soldier.* Oh, sir—!

*Charles.* You have no tidings.

*Soldier.* Sir—!

*Charles (desperately).* None, fool! but come to  
say what silence groans,

What earth numb and in deadness raves to me.

To tell Antonio hath gone out and o'er

A precipice hath stepped for sake of love.

This is not tidings. Hath it not on me

Been fixed forever? It is older than



Despair, as old as pain! . . . (*To HÆMON, who enters.*) Your sister—

*Bardas.* Hæmon—!

*Julian.* Hold him not in this anguish.

*Fulvia.* She and our Antonio have left us to our tears.

[*HÆMON stands motionless.*]

*Charles.* Let no one groan. I say let no one groan.

[*Rocks blindly.*]

Fury on him that groans! . . .

*Fulvia.* My lord!

*Charles (taking her hand).* Well, come.

[*As in a trance.*]

There's much to do. We will think of the dead—  
Perchance 'twill keep them near us—Speak to them,  
And they may answer while we wait, may float  
Dim words on moonbeams to us. Oh, for one  
That shall sound of forgiveness and of rest!

[*More wildly.*]

Oh, I have started on the mountain's brow  
A tremor that has loosed the avalanche,  
And penitence, too late, too late, too late,  
Was powerless as flowers along its path!

*[Sinks back in his chair and stares hope-  
lessly before him.]*

CURTAIN.

# NIRVANA DAYS

FIRST PUBLISHED 1909

To  
JAMES LANE ALLEN  
WITH FRIENDSHIP AND FAITHFUL ESTEEM

This page in the original text is blank.

## INVOCATION

*(From a High Cliff)*

Sweep unrest  
Out of my blood,  
Winds of the sea! Sweep the fog  
Out of my brain  
For I am one  
Who has told Life he will be free.  
Who will not doubt of work that's done,  
Who will not fear the work to do.  
Who will hold peaks Promethean  
Better than all Jove's honey-dew.  
Who when the Vulture tears his breast  
Will smile into the Terror's Eyes.  
Who for the World has this Bequest—  
Hope, that eternally is wise.

## THE STRONG MAN TO HIS SIRES

Tonight as I was riding on a wave  
Of triumph and of glory,  
A Question suddenly, as from the grave,  
Rose in me, culpatory.

“Whence come to you this joyance and this  
strength,”

It said, “this might of vision?  
This will that measures all things to its length,  
That cuts with calm decision?”

“This blood within your veins, that is as wine  
Which Destiny’s self blesses,  
Whence flows it, from what grape that is divine,  
Or trodden from what presses?”



“Do you so proud forget what hands have borne  
You to the heights and crowned you?  
Would you behold what sackcloth has been worn  
That laurels may surround you?” . . .

And “Yea!” I answered with affirming breath,  
“I would! you who arraign me!  
Whose words are as a sound sent forth of Death,  
And like to Death entrain me.

“I would! For if the flesh of me and soul  
Are fibred with the ages,  
My triumph is of them and manifold  
Of all life’s mystic stages.”

So, forth they came—a vast ancestral line,  
Upon my vision teeming,  
All shapes whom birth and nature could affine  
Unto me, faintly gleaming.

I knew them as I knew myself, and felt  
The Day of each within me;  
And so began to speak, the while they dwelt  
About—they who had been me.

“ My Sires,” I said, “ think you I have forgot  
The fervor of your living?  
How into me is moulded all you thought,  
Of getting or of giving?”

“ Think you I do not feel my every drop  
Of blood is as an ocean  
In which are surging and will never stop  
All things your hope gave motion?”

“ My senses, that are swift to take delight  
And shrine it in their being,  
Are they not born of all your faith, and bright  
With all your bliss of seeing?”

“ And my full heart within whose fount I hear  
Your voices that are vanished,  
Can it forget its gratitude or fear  
The foes *you* braved and banished?

“ No.—But the blindly striving years that led  
Your eyes first up to Beauty,  
Or taught you out of Ill to disembed  
The golden veins of Duty;

“ The wasting and incalculable wants  
That in you quailed or quivered;  
The longing that lit stars no dark now daunts—  
*I know, who stand delivered!*

“ To you then from whose throng the centuries  
Long dead slip now their shrouding,  
Who from oblivion's profundities  
Rise up, and round are crowding,

“ I say, Immortal do I hold your will !  
Its gathered might ascending  
Is sacred with the unconquerable might  
Of God—who sees its ending ;

“ Of God—on whose strong Vine, Heredity,  
Rooted in Voids primeval,  
The world climbs ever to some great To-Be  
Of passion or reprieval.”

I said—and on night's infinite beheld  
Silence alone beside me ;  
And majesty of greater meanings welled  
Into my soul, to guide me.

## THE FAIRIES OF GOD

Last night I slipt from the banks of dream  
And swam in the currents of God,  
On a tide where His fairies were at play,  
Catching salt tears in their little white hands,  
For human hearts;  
And dancing, dancing, in gala bands,  
On the currents of God;  
And singing, singing:—  
*There is no wind blows here or spray—  
Wind upon us!  
Only the waters ripple away  
Under our feet as we gather tears.  
God has made mortals for the years,  
Us for alway!  
God has made mortals full of fears,*

*Fears for the night and fears for the day,  
If they would free them from grief that scars,  
If they would keep all that love endears,  
If they would lay no more lilies on biers—  
Let them say!  
For we are swift to enchant and tire  
Time's will!  
Our feet are wiser than all desire,  
Our song is better than faith or fame;  
To whom it is given no ill e'er came,  
Who has it not grows chill!  
Who has it not grows laggard and lame,  
Nor knows that the world is a Minstrel's lyre,  
Smitten and never still! . . .  
Last night on the currents of God.*

## A SONG OF THE OLD VENETIANS

The seven fleets of Venice  
Set sail across the sea  
For Cyprus and for Trebizond  
Ayoub and Araby.  
Their gonfalons are floating far,  
St. Mark's has heard the mass,  
And to the noon the salt lagoon  
Lies white, like burning glass.

The seven fleets of Venice—  
And each its way to go,  
Led by a Falier or Tron,  
Zorzi or Dandolo.  
The Patriarch has blessed them all,  
The Doge has waved the word,

And in their wings the murmurings  
Of waiting winds are heard.

The seven fleets of Venice—  
And what shall be their fate?  
One shall return with porphyry  
And pearl and fair agate.  
One shall return with spice and spoil  
And silk of Samarcand.  
But nevermore shall *one* win o'er  
The sea, to any land.

*Oh, they shall bring the East back,  
And they shall bring the West,  
The seven fleets our Venice sets  
A-sail upon her quest.  
But some shall bring dcspair back  
And some shall leave their keels  
Deeper than wind or wave frets,  
Or sun ever steals.*



## NIRVANA DAYS

### I

If I were in Japan today,  
    In little Japan today,  
I'd watch the sampan-rowers ride  
    On Yokohama bay.  
I'd watch the little flower-folk  
    Pass on the Bund, where play  
Of "foreign" music fills their ears  
    With wonder new alway.

Or in a kuruma I'd step  
    And "Noge-yama!" cry,  
And bare brown feet should wheel me fast  
    Where Noge-yama, high

Above the city and sea's vast  
    Uprises, with the sigh  
Of pines about its festal fanes  
    Built free to sun and sky.

And there till dusk I'd sit and think  
    Of Shaka Muni, lord  
Of Buddhas; or of Fudo's fire  
    And rope and lifted sword.  
And, ere I left, a surging shade  
    Of clouds, a distant horde,  
Should break and Fugi's cone stand clear—  
    With sutras overscored.

Sutras of ice and rock and snow,  
    Written by hands of heat  
And thaw upon it, till 'twould seem  
    Meant for the final seat  
Of the lord Buddha and his bliss—  
    If ever he repeat

This life where millions still are bound  
Within Illusion's cheat.

## II

Or were I in Japan today—  
Perchance at Kyoto—  
Down Tera-machi I would search  
For charm or curio.  
Up narrow stairs in sandals pure  
Of soil or dust I'd go  
Into a room of magic shapes—  
Gods, dragons, dread Nio.

And seated on the silent mats,  
With many a treasure near—  
Of ivory the gods have dreamt,  
And satsuma as dear,  
Of bronzes whose mysterious mint  
Seems not of now or here—

I'd buy and dream and dream and buy,  
 Lost far in Mâyâ's sphere.

Then gathering up my gains at last,  
 Mid "sayonaras" soft  
 And bows and gentle courtesies  
 Repeated oft and oft,  
 My host and I should part—"O please  
 The skies much weal to waft  
 His years," I'd think, then cross San-jo  
 To fair Chion-in aloft.

For set aloft and set apart,  
 Beyond the city's din,  
 Under the shade of ancient heights  
 Lies templed calm Chion-in.  
 And there the great bell's booming fills  
 Its gates all day, and thin  
 Low beating on mokugyo, by  
 Priests passioning for sin.

And there the sun upon its courts  
    And carvings, gods and graves,  
Rests as no light of earth-lands known,  
    Like to Nirvana laves  
And washes with sweet under-flow  
    Into the soul's far caves.  
And no more shall this life seem real  
    To one who feels its waves.

“No more!” I'd say, then wander on  
    To Kiyomizu-shrine,  
Which is so old antiquity's  
    Far self cannot divine  
Its birth, but knows that Kwannon, she  
    Of mercy's might benign,  
Has reached her thousand hands alway  
    From it to Nippon's line.

And She should hear my many prayers,  
    And have my freest gifts.

And many days beside her should  
I watch the crystal rifts  
Of Ottawa's clear waters earn  
Their way, o'er rocks and drifts,  
Beside the trestled temple down—  
Like murmurs of sweet shrifts.

Then, when the city wearied me,  
To Katsura I'd wend—  
A garden hid across green miles  
Of rice-lands quaintly penned.  
And, by the stork-bestridden lake,  
I'd walk or musing mend  
My soul with lotus-memories  
And hopes—without an end.

## III

Or were I in Japan today,  
Hiroshima should call

My heart—Hiroshima built round  
Her ancient castle wall.  
By the low flowering moat where sun  
And silence ever fall  
Into a swoon, I'd build again  
Old days of Daimyo thrall.

Of charge and bloody countercharge,  
When many a samurai  
Fierce-panoplied fell at its pale,  
Suppressing groan or cry;  
Suppressing all but silent hates  
That swept from eye to eye,  
While lips smiled decorously on,  
Or mocked urbane goodbye.

Then to the river I would pass  
And drift upon its tide  
By many a tea-house hung in bloom  
Above its mirrored side.

And geisha fluttering gay before  
    Their guests should pause in pied  
Kimono, then with laughter bright  
    Behind the shoji hide.

Unto an isle of Ugina's  
    Low port my craft should swing,  
Or scarce an island seems it now  
    To my fair fancying,  
But a shrined jut of earth up thro  
    The sea from which to sing  
Unto the evening star of all  
    Night's incarnations bring.

Then backward thro the darkened streets  
    I'd walk: long lanterns writ  
With ghostly characters should dance  
    Beside each door, or flit,  
Thin paper spirits, to and fro  
    And mow the wind, when it



Demanded of them reverence  
And passed with twirl or twit.

What music, too, of samisen  
And koto I should hear!  
Tinkle on weirder tinkle thro  
The strangely wistful ear  
What shadows on the shoji-door  
Of my dim soul should veer  
All night in sleep, and haunt the light  
Of many a coming year!

## IV

Or were I in Japan today,  
From Ujina I'd sail  
For mountain-isled Miyajima  
Upon the distance, frail  
As the mirage, to Amida,  
Of this world's transient tale,

Where he sits clothed in boundless light  
And sees it vainly ail.

Up to the great sea-torii,  
Its temple-gate, I'd wind,  
There furl my sail beneath its beam;  
And soon my soul should find  
What it shall never, tho it sift  
The world elsewhere, and blind  
Itself at last with sight of all  
Earth's blisses to mankind.

"Miyajima! Miyajima!"  
How would enchantment chant  
The syllables within me, till  
Desire should cease and pant  
Of passion press no more my will—  
But let charmed peace supplant  
All thought of birth and death and birth—  
Yea, karma turn askant.

For on Miyajima none may  
    Give birth and none may die—  
Since birth and death are equal sins  
    Unto the wise. So I  
Should muse all day where the sea spills  
    Its murmur softly by  
The still stone lanterns all arow  
    Under the deathless sky.

And under cryptomeria-tree  
    And camphor-tree and pine,  
And tall pagoda, rising roof  
    On roof into the shine  
Of the pure air—red roof on roof,  
    With memories in each line  
Of far Confucian China where  
    They first were held divine.

And o'er Miyajima the moon  
    Should rise for me again.

So magical its glow, I dare  
Think of it only when  
My heart is strong to shun the snare  
Of witcheries that men  
May lose their souls in evermore,  
Nor, after, care nor ken.

## v

Yes, were I in Japan today  
These things I'd do, and more.  
For Ise gleams in royal groves,  
And Nara with its lore,  
And Nikko hid in mountains—where  
The Shogun, great of yore,  
Built timeless tombs whose glory glooms  
Funereally o'er.

These things I'd do! But last of all,  
On Kamakura's lea,

I'd seek Daibutsu's face of calm  
And still the final sea  
Of all the West within me—from  
Its fret and fever free  
My spirit—into patience, peace,  
And passion's mastery.

## THE YOUNG TO THE OLD

You who are old—  
And have fought the fight—  
And have won or lost or left the field—  
Weigh us not down  
With fears of the world, as we run!  
With the wisdom that is too right,  
The warning to which we cannot yield,  
The shadow that follows the sun,  
Follows forever!  
And with all that desire must leave undone,  
Though as a god it endeavor;  
Weigh, weigh us not down!

But gird our hope to believe—  
That all that is done

Is done by dream and daring—  
Bid us dream on!  
That Earth was not born  
Or Heaven built of bewaring—  
Yield us the dawn!  
You dreamt your hour—and dared, but we  
Would dream till all you despaired of *bc*;  
Would dare—till the world,  
Won to a new wayfaring,  
Be thence forever easier upward drawn!

## OFF THE IRISH COAST

Gulls on the wind,  
Crying! crying!  
Are you the ghosts  
Of Erin's dead?  
Of the forlorn  
Whose days went sighing  
Ever for Beauty  
That ever fled?

Ever for Light  
That never kindled?  
Ever for Song  
No lips have sung?  
Ever for Joy  
That ever dwindled?  
Ever for Love that stung?



## A VISION OF VENUS AND ADONIS

I know not where it was I saw them sit,  
For in my dreams I had outwandered far  
That endless wanderer men call the sea—  
Whose winds like incantations wrap the world  
And help the moon in her high mysteries.  
I know not how it was that I was led  
Unto their tryst; or what dim infinite  
Of perfect and imperishable night  
Hung round, a radiance ineffable;  
For I was too intoxicate and tranced  
With beauty that I knew was very love.  
So when divinity from her had stolen  
Into his spirit, as, from fields of myrrh  
Or forests of red sandal by the sea,  
Steal slaking airs, and he began to speak,

I could but gather these few fleeting words:  
"Your glance sends fragrance sweeter than the lily,  
Your hands are visible bodiments of song.  
You are the voice that April light has lost,  
Her silence that was music of glad birds.  
The wind's heart have you, and its mystery,  
When poet Spring comes piping o'er the hills  
To make of Tartarus forgotten fear.  
Yea all the generations of the world,  
Whose whence and whither but the gods shall  
    know,  
Are vassal to your vows forevermore."  
And she, I knew, made answer, for her words  
Fell warm as womanhood with wordless things,  
But I had drifted on within my dream,  
To that pale space which is oblivion.

## SOMNAMBULISM

### I

Night is above me,  
And Night is above the night.  
The sea is beside me souging, or is still.  
The earth as a somnambulist moves on  
In a strange sleep . . .  
A sea-bird cries.  
And the cry wakes in me  
Dim, dead sea-folk, my sires—  
Who more than myself are me.  
Who sat on their beach long nights ago and saw  
The sea in its silence;  
And cursed it or implored;  
Or with the Cross defied;  
Then on the morrow in their boats went down.

## II

Night is above me . . .  
And Night is above the night.  
Rocks are about me, and, beyond, the sand . . .  
And the low reluctant tide,  
That rushes back to ebb a last farewell  
To the flotsam borne so long upon its breast.  
Rocks. . . . But the tide is out,  
And the slime lies naked, like a thing ashamed  
That has no hiding-place.  
And the sea-bird hushes—  
The bird and all far cries within my blood—  
And earth as a somnambulist moves on.

## SERENATA MAGICA

*(Venetian)*

My gondola is a black sea-swan,  
And glides beneath the moon.  
Dark palaces beside me pass,  
Like visions in a beryl-glass  
Of what shall never be, alas,  
Or what has been too soon.  
Like what shall never be, but in  
The breathing of a swoon.

My gondola is a black sea-swan,  
That makes a mystic way  
From door to phantom water-door,  
While carven balconies hang o'er

And casements framed for love say more  
    Than love can ever say.  
Say more than any voice but one  
    Of silent magic may.

My gondola is a black sea-swan—  
    Rialto lies behind.  
And by me the Salute swings,  
A loveliness that must take wings  
And vanish, as imaginings  
    Within an Afrit's mind;  
As vague and vast imaginings  
    That can no substance find.

My gondola is a black sea-swan:  
    San Marco and the shaft  
Of the slim Campanile steal  
Into my trance and leave a seal  
Upon my senses, like the feel  
    Of long enchantment quaffed:

Of long enchantments such as songs  
Of sage Al Raschid waft.

My gondola is a black sca-swan  
And gains to the lagoon,  
Where samphire and sea-lavender  
Around me float or softly stir,  
While far-off Venice still lifts her  
Fair witchery to the moon,  
And all that wonder e'er gave birth  
Seems out of beauty hewn.

## O-SHICHI AND MOTO

### I

O-Shichi, all my heart today  
Is dreaming of your fate ;  
And of your little house that stood  
Beside the temple gate ;  
Of its plum-garden hid away  
Behind white paper doors ;  
And of the young boy-priest who read too late with  
you love-lores.

### II

O-Shichi dwelt in Yedo—where  
A thousand wonders dwell,  
Gods, golden palaces and shrines  
That like a charm enspell.



O-Shichi dwelt among them there,  
More wondrous, she, than all—  
A flower some forgetful god had from his hand  
let fall.

## III

And all her days were as the dream  
On flowers in the sun.  
And all her ways were as the waves  
That by Shin-bashi run.  
And in her gaze there was the gleam  
Of stars that cannot wait  
Too long for love and so fare forth from heaven  
to find a mate.

## IV

O-Shichi dwelt so, till one night  
When all the city slept,  
When not a paper lantern swung,

When only fire-flies swept  
Soft cipherings of spirit-light  
Across the temple's gloom—  
Sudden a cry was heard—the cry that should  
O-Shichi doom.

## v

For following the cry came flame,  
A Chaya's roof a-blaze.  
And quickly was the street a stream  
Of stricken folk, whose gaze  
Knew well that when the morning came  
Their homes would be but smoke  
Vanished upon the winds: now had O-Shichi's  
fate awoke.

## vi

And waited. For at morning priests  
In pity of her years

And desolation led her back  
Behind the great god's spheres;  
The great god Buddha, who of beasts  
And men all mindful was.  
O Buddha, in thy very courts O-Shichi learned  
love's laws!

## VII

Love of the body and the soul,  
Not of Nirvana's state!  
Love that beyond itself can see  
No beauty wise or great.  
O-Shichi for a moon—a whole  
Moon happy there beheld  
The young boy-priest whose yearning e'er into his  
eyes upwelled.

## VIII

So all too soon for her was found  
Elsewhere a kindly thatch.

And all too soon O-Shichi heard  
Behind her close love's latch.  
They led her from the temple's ground  
Into untrusting days.

And all too soon that happy moon was hid in  
sorrow's haze.

## IX

For now at dawn she rose to dress  
With blooms some honored vase,  
Or to embroider or brew tea's  
Sweet ceremonial grace.  
Or she at dusk, in sick distress,  
Before the butsudán,  
Must to ancestral tablets pray—not to her Moto-  
San!

## X

Not unto him, her love, who sways  
Her breast, as moon the tide,

Whose breath is incense—Ah, again  
To see him softly glide  
Before the grave god-idol's gaze  
Of inward ecstasy,  
To watch the great bell boom for him its mystic  
sutra-plea.

## XI

But weeks grew into weariness,  
And weariness to pain,  
And pain to lonely wildness, which  
Set fire unto her brain.  
And, "I will see my love!" distress  
Made fair O-Shichi cry,  
"Tho for ten lives away from him I then must live  
and die."

## XII

Yet—no! She dared not go to him,  
To her he could not come.

Then, sudden a thought her being swept  
And struck her loud heart dumb.  
Till in her rose confusion dim,  
Fear fighting with Desire—  
Which to O-Shichi took the shape of Fudo, god  
of fire.

## XIII

And Fudo won her: for that night  
Did fond O-Shichi dare  
To set aflame her father's house,  
Hoping again to share  
The temple with her acolyte,  
Her lover-priest, who, spent  
With speechless passion for her face, in vain strove  
to repent.

## XIV

But ah! what destiny can do  
Is not for folly's hand.

The flames O-Shichi kindled were  
From sea to Shiba fanned.  
And it was learned a love-sick girl  
Had charred a thousand homes.  
Then were the fury-smitten folk like to a sea that  
foams.

## XV

And so they seized her: but not in  
The temple—O not there  
Had she been led again by priests  
In pity—led to share  
Her lover's eyes; no, but her sin  
Brought not one dear delight  
To poor O-Shichi—who was now to look on her  
last rite.

## XVI

For to the stake they bound her—fire  
They lit—to be her fate. . . .

O-Shichi, have I dreamt it all?  
Your face, the temple gate,  
The fair boy-priest shut from desire  
In Buddhahood to-be?  
Then let me dream and ever dream, O flower by  
Yedo's sea.



## A PRAYER

One cricket left, of summer's choir.  
One glow-worm, flashing life's last fire.  
One frog with leathern croak  
    Beneath the oak,—  
    And the pool stands leaden  
Where November twilights deaden,  
    Day's unspent desire.

One star in heaven—East or West.  
One wind—a gypsy seeking rest.  
One prayer within my heart—  
    For all who part—  
    That on some portal,  
God may join at last, immortal,  
All who keep love's quest.

## THE INFINITE'S QUEST

All night the rain  
And the wind that beat  
Dull wings of pain  
On the seas without.  
All night a Voice  
That broke in my brain  
And blew blind thoughts about.

All night they whirled  
As a haunted throng  
From some dim world  
Where there is no rest.  
All night the rain,  
And the wind that swirled,  
And the Infinite's lone quest.

## LAD AND LASS

I heard the buds open their lips and whisper,

Whisper,

“ Spring is here ! ”

The robins listened

And sang it loud.

The blue-birds came

In a fluttering crowd.

The cardinal preached

It high and proud,

Spring !

And thro the warm earth their song went trilling,

Trilling,

“ Wake ! Arise ! ”

The kingcups quickly

## NIRVANA DAYS

Assembled, strong.  
The bluets stept  
From the moss in throng.  
Like fairies too  
Came the cress along.  
Spring!

And love in your breast, my lass, awaking—  
Waking,  
*Love* was born!  
Your eyes were kindled,  
Your lips were warm,  
Wild beauties broke  
From your face and form.  
And all my heart  
Was a heaven-storm,  
Was Spring!

## AT STRATFORD

I could not sleep. The wind poured in my ear  
Immortal names—Lear, Hamlet, Hal, Macbeth,  
And thro the night I heard the rushing breath  
Of ghost and witch and fool go whirling by.  
I followed them, under the phantom sphere  
Of the pale moon, along the Avon's near  
And nimbused flowing, followed to his bier—  
Who had evoked them first with mighty eye.  
And as I gazed upon the peaceful spire  
That points above earth's most immortal dust,  
I could have asked God for His starry Lyre  
Out of the skies to play my praise upon.  
I could have shouted, as, O Wind, thou must,  
“Here lies Humanity: kneel, and pass on.”

## THE IMAGE PAINTER

Up under the roof, in cold or heat,  
Far up, aloof from the city street,  
    She sat all day  
    With brush and clay,  
And painted, sadly human.  
And if she thought of ease and rest,  
Of love that spells God's name the best,  
Her few friends heard but one request—  
    “ Pray for a tired little woman.”

She sat from dawn till weary dusk.  
Her hands plied on—with but a husk—  
    But one, to break  
    And for Christ's sake  
To eat: was *He* not human?

Then when the light would leave her brush  
She'd sit there still, in the dim hush,  
And say aloud, lest tears should rush—  
    "Pray for a tired little woman."

They found her so—one morning when  
A knock brought no sweet welcome ken  
    Of her still face  
    And cloistral grace  
And brow so bravely human.  
They found her by the window bar,  
Her eyes fixed where had been some star.  
O you that rest, where'er you are,  
    Pray for the tired little woman.

## WANDA

“ She shall be sportive as the fawn  
That wild with glee across the lawn  
Or up the mountain springs ; ”

I'm Wanda born  
Of the mirthful morn  
So I heard the red-buds whisper  
To the forest beech,  
Tho I know that each  
Is but a gossipy lisper.

I taunt the brook  
With his hair outshook  
O'er the weir so cool and mossy,



And mock the crow  
As he peers below  
With a caw that's vain and saucy.

Where the wahoo reds  
And the sumac spreads  
Tall plumes o'er the purple privet,  
I beg a kiss  
Of the wind, tho I wis  
Right well he never will give it.

I hide in the nook  
And sunbeams look  
For me everywhere, like fairies.  
Then out I glide  
By the gray deer's side—  
Ha, ha, but he never tarries!

Then I fright the hare  
From his turfy lair  
And after him send a volley  
Of song that stops  
Him under the copse  
In wonderment at my folly.

And Autumn cries  
“ Be sad ! ” or sighs  
Thro her nun lips palely pouting.  
But then I leap  
To the woods and keep  
It wild with gleeing and shouting.

And when the sun  
Has almost spun  
A path to his far Golconda,  
I climb the hill  
And listen, still,  
While he calls me—“ Wanda ! Wanda ! ”

And then I go  
To the valley—Oh,  
My dreams are sweeter than dreaming!  
All night I play  
Over lands of Fay,  
In delight that seems not seeming.

## IN A STORM

*(To a Petrel)*

All day long in the spindrift swinging,  
Bird of the sea! bird of the sea!  
How I would that I had thy winging—  
How I envy thee!

How I would that I had thy spirit,  
So to careen, joyous to cry,  
Over the storm and never fear it!  
Into the night that hovers near it!  
Calm on a reeling sky!

All day long, and the night, unresting!  
Ah! I believe thy every breath  
Means that Life's Best comes ever breasting  
Peril and pain and death!

## ANTAGONISTS

### I

Life flung to Art this voice, of mercy bare,  
“ Fool, to my human earth come you, so free,  
To wreathe with phantom immortality  
Whoever climbs with passionate lone care  
That shifting, feverous and shadow stair  
To Beauty—which is vainer than the sea  
On furious thirst, or than a mote to Me  
Who fill yon infinite great Everywhere?  
Let them alone—my children! they are born  
To mart and soil and saving commerce o'er  
Wind, wave and many-fruited continents.  
And you can feed them but of crumbs and scorn,  
And futile glory when they are no more.  
Within my hand alone is recompense!”

## II

But Art made fierce reply, "Anathema,  
On you who fill flesh but the spirit scorn.  
Who give it to the unrequiting law  
Of your brute soullessness and heart unborn  
To aught than barter in your low bazaar—  
Though Beauty die for it from star to star.  
You are the god of Judas and those who  
Betrayed Him unto nail and thorn and sword!  
Of that relentless worm-bit Florence horde  
Who drove lone Dante from them till he grew  
So great in death they begged his bones to strew  
Their pride and wealth and useless praise upon.  
Anathema! I cry; and will, till none  
Of all earth's children still shall worship you."

## SEEDS

A thousand years  
In a mummy's hand  
A seed may lie,  
Then, planted, spring  
Into life again  
Under sun and sky.

A thousand days  
In a soul's dark ways  
A word may wait.  
But a touch at length  
May arouse its strength  
And the word proves—Fate.

## THE SOUL'S RETURN

Let me lie here—  
I care not for the distant hills today,  
And the blue sphere  
Of far infinity that draws away  
All to its deep,  
Would only sweep  
Soothing the farther from me with its sway.

Let me lie here—  
Gazing with vacant sadness on this weed.  
The cricket near  
Will utter all my heart can bear to heed.  
Another sound  
Would but confound  
Still more my life's bewilderment and need.



Let me lie here:  
For now, so long my wasted soul has tossed  
On the wide Mere  
Of Mystery Hope's wing alone has crossed,  
I ask no more  
Than to restore  
To simple things the wonder they have lost.

## ROMANCE

*(To A. H. R. on North Cliff, Lynton, Devon)*

White-caps hurry to meet the shore  
An hundred fathoms down.  
Gray sails are shimmering on the wind  
Far out from Lynmouth town.

High crags above us are whisp'ring keen,  
The heather and the ling  
Laugh to the sky as driven by  
The wild gulls cry or cling.

And, where the far sun like a god  
Scatters the mist, lies Shore.  
Is it Romance's magic realm  
Spring reigns forever o'er?

Romance that our morning hearts could see  
Across the darkest foam?  
Then do we know it well, my love,  
Because it is our Home.

## ON THE ATLANTIC

*(To A. H. R.)*

Who stood upon that schooner's driven deck  
Last night as reefed and shuddering she hove  
Into the twilight and all desperate drove  
From wave to angrier wave that sought her wreck?  
Who labored at her helm and watched the wind  
Stagger the sea with all his stunning might,  
Until in dimness dwindling from our sight  
She vanished in the wrack that rode behind?  
We know not, you and I, but our two souls  
That followed as storm-petrels o'er the waves  
Felt all the might of Him who sinks or saves,  
And all the pity of earth's unreached goals.  
Felt all—then swift returning to our love  
Dwelt in its peace, uplifted safe above.

THE GREAT BUDDHA OF KAMAKURA  
TO THE SPHINX

Grave brother of the burning sands,  
Whose eyes enshrine forever  
The desert's soul, are you not worn  
Of gazing outward to dim strands  
Of stars that weary never?

Infinity no answer has  
For Time's untold distresses.  
Its deepest maze of mystery  
Is but Illusion built up as  
The blind build skies—with guesses.

Nor has Eternity a place  
On any starry summit.

The winds of Death are wide as Life,  
And leave no world untouched—but race,  
And soon with Night benumb it.

And Karma is the law of soul  
And star—yea, of all Being.  
And from it but one way there is,  
Retreat into that transcèd Whole—  
Which is not Sight nor Seeing;

Which is not Mind nor Mindlessness,  
Nor Deed nor driven Doer,  
Nor Want nor Wasting of Desire;  
But only that which won can bless;  
And of all else is pure.

Turn then your eyes from the far track  
Of worlds, and gazing inward,  
O brother, fare where Life has come,  
Yea, into its far Whence fare back.  
All other ways are sinward.

## A NIKKO SHRINE

Under the sway, in old Japan,  
Of silent cryptic trees,  
There is a shrine the worldliest  
Would near with bended knees.

Green, thro a torii, the way  
Leads to it, worn, across  
A rivulet whose voice intones  
With mystery of moss.

A mystery that is everywhere:  
The god beneath his shrine  
Seems but a mossy shape—yet so  
Ensheathed is more divine.

For tho Nature has muffled him  
And sealed him there away,  
The meaning of all faith remains—  
That men will ever pray.

Aye, and as long as sore-distressed  
Will kneel on any sod,  
Or at the lowliest of shrines  
That waken in them God.



## THE QUESTION

I shall lie so one day,  
With lips of Silence set;  
Eyes that no tear can wet  
Again: a thing of Clay.

I shall lie so, and Earth  
Will seize again her dust—  
Though she must gnaw and rust  
The coffin's iron girth.

I shall lie so—and they  
Who still the Day bestride,  
Will stand so by my side  
And with sad yearning say:

“ What is he now, this man,  
Shut in a pallor there,  
His spirit that could dare,  
What—what now is its span?

“ A withered atom’s space  
Within a withered brain?  
Or can it from the Wain  
To far Orion race? ”

And, like all that have died,  
I shall but answer—naught.  
Yet Time this truth has taught:  
The Question—will abide.

## I'LL LOOK NO MORE

I'll look no more ! thro timeless hours my eyes  
Without intent have watched the slowing flight  
Of ebon crows across quiescent skies  
Till all are gone ; the last, a lonely bird,  
Scudding to rest thro streams of golden curd  
That flow far eastward to the coming night.  
And as I turn again to foiling thought,  
Beside the kindled lamp that seems to grieve,  
My spirit leaves me as faint zephyrs leave  
Each tree. Till, when the night comes, full-  
    enfraught

With silence, and the slow oil sinks beneath  
The noiseless burning wick of yellow flame,  
It is as if God back to him would breathe  
All the world's given life, and end its Aim.

## NIGHT'S OCCULTISM

Northward the twilight thro dark drifts  
Of cloud-wreck lingers cold.  
Southward the sated lightning sinks  
Beneath the wooded wold.

Eastward immovable deep shade  
Is sealed with mystery.  
Westward a memory of dead gold  
Wakes on a sunset sea.

Under, is earth's still orbiting;  
Over, a clearing star:  
In all, the spirit litany  
Of life's strange avatar.

## UNCROWNED

I am not other than men are, you say?  
But faulty and failing? And your love can lend  
No glory of illusion to o'erlay  
The lack, and make me seem one in whom blend  
Nobilities wherein your heart may lose  
All that it feels of flaw in me, or rues?

Can it so be? Did ever woman love  
Whose faith wreathed not about the brow she chose  
Aureolas illuming him above  
All that another thinks he is, or knows?  
I ask it bravely, for the way is long,  
And, haloless, should I not lead you wrong?

## WRITTEN IN HELL

*(By Sir Giles, whom the Witch of Urm leads to  
Judas Iscariot)*

Against a castle moated gloomily by a bitter drain  
of blood,

From whose fetid wave contumely

Of all truth was reeking fumy

And infectiously, I stood;

Waiting for her sign—

A shriek repeated nine.

I shrank at every aspid quivering fear set crawling  
in my breast.

But betimes I felt a shivering,

As a shriek cut thro me slivering

All my soul with sin's unrest—  
Christ! it raised the dead  
Out of the moat's black bed.

Nine times—and then across the thickening reek a  
rusty draw was dropped;  
For her was it: and soon, quickening,  
O'er she sped—a shadow sickening  
All with horror as it stopped—  
Stopped to laugh a laugh  
No devil's soul could quaff.

I swear its clamor tore the stuttering leaves from  
shrub and shrunken tree;  
Swear no limbo e'er heard muttering  
Like that spawn of echoes sputtering  
Midnight with their drunken glee—  
Yet, ere half were done,  
I could not hear a one.

She put her finger burning eerily to my lips—I  
    heard them lock;  
Led me then a march-way, cheerily—  
Tho the quick ooze spurted drearily  
Thro root-rotten curd and rock.  
    Things like water-ghouls  
    Slid slimily in pools.

She stepped just once upon a hideous burrow dank  
    and haired with grass;  
Fixed upon me eyes perfidious  
As a fiend's are, yet insidious—  
Questioned if I dared to pass.  
    "I will search all Hell  
    To find him," from me fell.

And so was drawn thro dark cadaverous with the  
    sound of gabbling dead.  
Oft we heard them hoot palaverous,  
And beside us saw unsavorous



In the mould some glutton head  
Grin to a hissing bat,  
That scraped him as he spat.

And tho I knew her witch turned shepherdess to a  
soul blind as a sheep's,  
Still I dogged her on, as jeopardous  
Sped she—like a leashless leopardess—  
Down . . . till, mid miasmic deeps,  
“Swim,” she gasped behind—  
And like a she-wolf whined.

It almost seemed to me a deadening as the sluice of  
dreary Styx.  
Fire and foulest slush soul-leadening  
Did I drink, and swam leagues reddening  
With my lunging weary licks.  
Up a sulphurous bank  
We climbed, and there I sank.

And then once more that laugh—a shrivelling,  
ghastly, gaunt, uncanny spate.

Up I sprang and cursed my snivelling—  
Cursed my weary soul for drivelling,  
And for so forgetting Hate.

“You will find him there,”  
She pointed, thro her hair.

I write these words from Hell where bloodily locked  
with him in fight I woke.

Where we fall down gulphs spilt ruddily  
With a glazing gore: or, muddily,  
In mad night and horror choke.

Yet I do not care,  
For he groans by me there.

## AT THE HELM

(*Nova Scotian*)

Fog, and a wind that blows the sea  
Blindly into my eyes.  
And I know not if my soul shall be  
When the day dies.

But if it be not and I lose  
All that men live to gain—  
I who have little known but hues  
Of wind and rain—

Still I shall envy no man's lot,  
For I have held this great,  
Never in whines to have forgot  
That Fate is Fate.

## DEAD LOVE

If this should never end—  
This wandering in oblivious mood  
Along a rutless road that leads  
From wood to deeper wood—  
This crunching with unheedful foot  
Acorns, I think, and withered leaves . .  
Perhaps a rotten root—

If this should never end—  
This seeing with insentient eyes  
Something that seems like earth, and, too,  
Like overbending skies;  
This feeling, well—that time is space,  
Space, time; and each a pallid glass  
In which Life sees her face—

If it should never end—  
The road, the wandering and the feel  
Of dead infinities that seem  
O'er our dead sense to steal,  
And like seas cease above—  
Would it much matter, love?

## MORTAL SIN

*(Song for a drama)*

Much the wind  
Knows of my heart,  
Though he whispers in my ear  
That he has seen me burn and start  
When I dream of your breast, my dear

Much the wind  
Knows of my soul!  
For no soul has he to lose  
On a mistress who can dole  
Kisses that drug as poison-dews.

## SEA-MAD

*(A Breton Maid)*

Three waves of the sea came up on the wind to me!

One said:

“ Away! he is dead!

Upon my foam I have flung his head!

Go back to your cote, you shall never wed!—

(Nor he!)”

Three waves of the sea came up on the wind to me.

Two brake.

The third with a quake

Cried loud, “ O maid, I’ll find for thy sake

His dead lost body: prepare his wake!”

(And back it plunged to the sea!)

Three waves of the sea came up on the wind to me.

One bore—

And swept on the shore—

His pale, pale face I shall kiss no more!

Ah, woe to women death passes o'er!

(Woe's me!)



## WORMWOOD

*(In Old England)*

What is he whispering to her there  
Under the hedge-row spray?  
“Spring, Spring, Spring?”—Is the world so fair  
To him, fool, that he has no care  
As he cuckoos it all day?

Is he quite sure—quite sure the sap  
Of life's not hate, but love?  
If I should tell him there's no gap  
Between her and a . . . nameless hap,  
Would he still want his “dove”?

Or would he go as blind to buds  
As I am, who watch here.

While o'er her face a rapture scuds,  
As he is pouring poet floods  
Of passion in her ear?

It would be swords—swords! . . . And his steel  
Should rip death from my breast.  
But would he ever know the feel  
Of Spring again, of its ribald reel,  
As once *I* did, the best?

No! He would curse henceforward leaf  
And flower and light—as I.  
Spring?—It is fire, lust, ashes, grief—  
All that is Hell's, in hope or fief! . . .  
He'll learn it ere he die.

## QUEST AND REQUITAL

### I

*(Before He Comes)*

Sweet under swooning blue and mellow mist  
September waves of forest overflow  
The hills with crimson, amaranth and gold.  
Winds warm with the memory of scented hours  
Dead Summer gathers in her leafy lap,  
Rustle the distance with dim murmurings  
That sink upon the air as soft as shades  
Dropt from the overleaning clouds to earth;  
While golden-rod and sedge and aster hushed  
In sunny silence and the oblivion  
Of life drawn from the insentient veins of Time,  
Await the searing swoon of Autumn's reign.  
It is a day when death must seem as birth,  
And birth as death; and life—till love comes—pain.

## II

*(He Has Come)*

These are the leafy hills and listless vales  
Of iridescent Autumn—this the oak  
Against whose lichened bole at peace I leant  
Thro the long sunny hours of afternoon.  
Here are the bitter-sweet and elder sprays  
I fingered, dreaming to the muted flow  
Of breezes overhead—and here the word  
I wrote unwittingly upon the soil.  
How long ago it was I cannot tell:  
The loneliness of unrequited love  
Lies like a blank eternity between  
Those hours and these I hear slip thro my heart.  
I only know all days I've ever seen  
Must seem now of some other life apart!

## III

*(He Loves)*

“ Will you let any moment dip its wing  
Into your heart and find no love of me  
To tint with deathless Dream ”—he said—“ and  
    Spring,  
Its flight to the dim bourne of memory?  
Will you have any grief that can forget  
How grief should find forgetfulness in love?  
And since your soul in my soul's zone is set  
Will it sometimes ask other spheres to rove  
Where touch and voice of me shall not be met?  
Ah no! in all the underdeeps of Death  
Or overheights of Life it still shall be  
At tryst with mine thro moan or ecstasy.  
In all! ” . . . Yet ere a year he'll draw no breath  
But is another's!—Will God let it be?

## IV

*(Betrayed by Him)*

All day I've bent my heart beneath the yoke  
Of goading toil, remembering to forget,  
To still upon my lips his kiss that woke  
Me in elysian love one word has broke—  
One stinging word of severance and regret.  
All day I've blotted from my eyes his face,  
But now at evening tide it comes again,  
And memories into my darkened soul  
Rush as the stars into high heaven's space.  
As the bright stars! But, ah, tomorrow! when  
Once more I must forget and see life's goal,  
That was so green, with sering laurel hung.  
Tomorrow and tomorrow! till is wrung  
Peace from the piteous hours I strive among!



*(Finding No Peace)*

I say unto all hearts that cannot rest  
For want of love, for beating loud and lonely,  
Pray the great Mercy-God to give you only  
Love that is passionless within the breast.  
Pray that it may not be a haunting fire,  
A vision that shall steal insatiably  
All beautiful content, all sweet desire,  
From faith and dream, star, flower, and song, and  
    sea.

But seek that soul and soul may meet together  
Knowing they have forever been but one—  
Meet and be surest when ill's chartless weather  
Drives blinding gales of doubt across their sun.  
Pray—pray! lest what seemed love shall change and  
    tether  
You to abhorrence past oblivion.

## VI

*(In After Years to Him)*

You say that love then led us—you and me?  
I say 'twas hate, that wore love's wanting eyes:  
Hate that I could not tear away the lies  
That wrapped you with their silken sorcery.  
Hate that for you I could not open skies  
Where beauty lives of her own loveliness;  
That God would give me no omnipotence  
To purge and mould anew your soul's numb sense.  
Aye, hate that I could love you not tho love  
Pent in me ached with passion-born distress—  
While thro unfathomable dark the Prize  
Seemed sinking, as my soul, from heaven above.  
Love, say you? love? and hate rent us apart?  
I tell you hate alone so tears the heart.



## VII

*(To Him After His Death)*

God who can bind the stars eternally  
With but a breath of spirit speech, a thought;  
Who can within earth's arms lay the mad sea  
Unseverably, and count it as sheer naught;  
With his All-might could bind not you and me.  
For tho He pressed us heart to burning heart  
And sanctioned, as it seemed, our passion's all,  
Still did our souls unblending stand apart  
As aliens beating fierce against the wall  
Of dark unsympathies that would upstart.  
Stand alien, aye! and would tho we should meet,  
Beyond the oblivion of unnumbered births,  
Upon some world where Time cannot repeat  
The feeblest syllable that once was earth's.

## LOVE IN EXTREMIS

I care not what they say who hold  
We should speak but of life and joy;  
I have met death in one I love,  
Death lusting to destroy.

And I have fought him vein by vein,  
Loosened his cold and creeping clutch,  
Driven him from her—twice and thrice—  
With might too much.

Yet with too little! for I know  
That she at last will lie there still.  
Then all my fire of love shall fail  
To thaw that chill;

For it will freeze light from her eyes,  
Pulse from her breast and from her soul  
Me, whom no opiate of peace  
Can e'er console.

None: . . . till I follow her, in time,  
And find her, though all Dust deny!  
With that to be I'll front the day,  
And fronting die.

## QUARREL

And is it so  
That two who stand  
Heart closed in heart,  
Hand knit to hand,  
Can let love go,  
And, as its foe,  
Strive thus, nor understand?

Does one ask much?  
One give too small?  
Till so is lost,  
It may be—All?  
For but a touch  
Of pride shall such  
A heaven be let fall?

No!—But to Fate  
Say with me, “Go:  
Death may bring dross  
But this I know;  
*Love can abate  
Life's harshest hate,  
So loving I bend low.”*

## OF THE FLESH

*(At Monte Carlo)*

We met upon the street:  
Quick passion sprung into the eye of each:  
No dilettante heat!  
For tho no more I love her—or beseech  
God for her—do you think  
We once again could face, signor, nor fear  
To leap the fatal brink  
And clasp each other—tho Hell hung a-near?

No, no! Such love as ours  
Stabbed peace heart-deep and burnt the flesh to  
mad.

It scorned the simple powers  
Of sympathy and mild repose, and had

One thirst alone—to hold  
Each other mouth to still unsated mouth  
Until, perchance, the cold  
And damp of death should end some night its  
drouth.

But that cold would not come—  
Day only would—to show us duty's eye  
Calm, pale, and sternly dumb.  
And so we'd swear never to kiss or sigh  
Again—for well we knew  
God grants such boons only to man and wife.  
But night distilled the dew  
Of loneliness—and so, once more, that life.

And how was the spell burst?  
Each long embrace seemed sweeter than the last;  
Each dulling heart-beat nurst  
The shame, till . . . well, I tore me from the past,

And cried, "I hate my soul,  
And thine and this false love!" . . . whereon she  
fell.

And so I kissed her . . . stole  
The ring that choked her finger . . . said farewell.

And since then Time has pressed  
Ten restless years. But if I saw her lay  
Her hand upon her breast,  
As once she used, and send her soul to say  
A word with those dark eyes . . .  
Ha, what is that, signor? "Respect? . . . My  
wife?"

That's as may be. You rise?  
Adieu, signor. Fate deals the cards in life.



## A DEATH SONG

*(For a Drama)*

Toll no bell and say no prayer,  
Let no rose die on my bier.  
All I hoped for shall appear  
Or be well forgotten, there.  
(Like the waves of yesteryear.)

Toll no bell and drop no sigh,  
Bear me softly to the tomb;  
Life was dark, but light is nigh—  
Light no sorrow shall consume  
(And no kiss of love—or cry).

Toll no bell; the clod will toll  
Grief enough for any ear.  
When the last has sounded clear,  
Know that I have reached the Goal  
(Which is God seen thro no tear).

## ON BALLYTEIGUE BAY

I've heard the sea-dead three nights come keening

And crying to my door.

Why will they affright me with their threening

Forevermore!

O have they no grave in the salt sea-places

To lay them in?

Do they know, do they know—with their cold dead

faces!—

Know . . . my sin?

There's blood on my soul. The Lord cannot wipe it

Away with His own blood.

I've beaten my breast with blows that stripe it,

And burned His Rood

With kisses that shrivel my lips—that shrivel  
    To sin on the air.  
But the night and the storm cry on me evil.  
    Does He not care?

There's blood on my soul: but then . . . she should  
    never  
    Have said it was *his*—the child—  
And *hers*—for she knew I'd never forgive her . . .  
    I grew so wild  
There was just one thing to be done—to kill her:  
    Just one—no more.  
I took the keen steel . . . one stroke would still  
    her . . .  
    I counted four.

And she fell—fell down on the kelp—none near her.  
    But when she lay so fair  
I kissed her . . . because I knew I should fear her,  
    And smoothed her hair;

And shut her two eyes that fixed me fearless  
Of death and pain.

And the blood on my hand I wiped off tearless—  
And that on my brain.

And I buried her quickly. The thorn-trees cover  
Her grave with spines. I pray  
That each in its fall will prick her and shove her  
To colder clay.

But . . . yonder! . . . she's up! and moans in the  
heather

A whimpering thing!

I'll bury her deeper in Autumn weather . . .

Or Winter . . . or Spring.

And then if she comes with them still to call me

Each night, I'll tell her loud

He was mine! and laugh when they try to pall me

With sea and shroud.

And I'll swear not to care for Christ or Devil.

They'll skitter back

To the waves, at that, and be gone with their  
revel. . . .

God spare me the rack!

## NIGHT-RIDERS<sup>1</sup>

See them mount in the dead of night—  
Men, three hundred strong!  
Armed and silent, masked from the light,  
Speeding swartly along.  
What is their errand? manly fight?  
Clench with a manly foe?  
I would rather be dead of wrong  
Than ride among them so.

See them enter the sleeping town.  
Hear the warning shot!  
Keep to your beds, free men—down, down!  
Dare you to move?—dare not!

<sup>1</sup> This clan of tobacco outlaws in Kentucky during 1907-1908 cast such disgrace on her good name as years will not suffice to erase.

These are your masters—these who crown  
Black Anarchy their king!  
I would rather my hand should rot  
Than have it do this thing.

See them steal to the house they seek—  
Brave men, O, brave all!  
There lies a sick boy, fever-weak;  
Who comes forth at call?  
A woman? “Go in, you bitch!” they reek.  
“Give us the old man out!”  
Rather my bitten tongue should fall  
To palsy than so shout.

And—they have him, “the old man,” now,  
Bound—with nine beside.  
One, a Judge of the Law’s grave brow,  
Sworn by it to bide.  
“Lash him!”—a hundred lashes plow  
A free-born back with pain!



God, shall we let such cowards ride  
And burn and beat and stain?

O the shame, and the bitter shame,  
That thus, across our land,  
Crime can arise and write her name  
Broad, with a bloody hand!  
O the shame, and the bitter shame  
Upon our chivalry.  
I would rather have led the band  
That dived on Calvary.

So, Night-errants, ride on and ride—  
Avenging, wrongly, wrong.  
But when the children at your side  
Grow lawless up and strong;  
When at their drunken hands you've died  
As beasts beside your door,  
You will repent, God knows it—long,  
These nights to Hell made o'er.

## HONOR

*(To the Night-Riders Who Murdered Hedges)*

Honor to men  
Who leave their homes  
    And children safe asleep.  
To take the cover of night and fright  
    Women that wake and weep!  
Honor, again,  
To those who mount  
    For blood—hounds in a pack!  
But let us honor the most of all—  
    Men that shoot in the back!

For, it is good  
To fare a-field  
    And frighten helpless things,

And how good with a torch to scorch

A poor man's harvestings.

But, if you would

Do something high

And blameless, brave not black,

Ride till you find a peaceful man—

Then shoot—shoot in the back!

Why, there was one

In Palestine

Who gave a certain kiss.

*Morc*, fine friends, do you give who live

In a land not far from this!

For wrongs *he* had done

He hanged himself—

Shame made a sick heart crack.

But you will muster and ride again—

And shoot—shoot in the back!

Oh, and you may!

But wait, the Day

Shall come—in wrath shall come!  
The Sovereign Law that you flaunt and  
daunt,  
Will not lie always dumb!  
Her prisons gray  
They are slow, but wide;  
When they open, you will lack  
Many a thing—but most, fair friends,  
The chance to shoot in the back!

## BRUDE<sup>1</sup>

*(A Dramatic Fantasy)*

Dealing with :

*Boadicea*, queen of the Britons.

*Lamora*, a Gaulish captive.

*Brude*, a Druid.

*Cormo*, a warrior.

*Corlun*, Druid high-priest,

and

*Horma*, a wandering hag.

SCENE: *A Hall of hewn wood, on the island of Mona, in which BOADICEA sits enthroned and attended. On her right, warriors, long-haired,*

<sup>1</sup>This sketch, written in 1898, was in no sense conceived for the stage.

*mustached and painted with woad. On the left, a band of Druids robed in white: among them BRUDE, whom she watches jealously from time to time. On the floor in front of her cringes LAMORA, held by CORMO.*

*Boadicea.* Britons, hear!  
Ye know how my lord,  
Caerleon's liege,  
Swore feal to the Romans  
His lorn wife and daughters—  
When the wolf, Death,  
Gnawed life from his heart.  
Ye know how the Roman,  
Ravenous traitor,  
Slaves us with thongs  
Of brutal behest.  
Will ye still daunt  
Your necks to the noose?

*All.* No! no! Queen! no, no, no!

*Boadicea.* Then, warriors of iron,

Sworded with terror,  
Fly to your henges!  
Fight till ye crowd  
Hell with the ghosts  
Of ethlings that Britons hate.

*Warriors.* To the slaughter! Hro! to the  
slaughter!

*[They rush from the hall in haste.]*

*Boadicea (continuing).* And ye, Druid seers,  
Heard by the gods,  
Feared by the fiends,  
Ye must away!  
To your dark fane,  
The gaunt oak-forest  
Holy with mistle!  
White-robed as spirits,  
Gold knives uplifting,  
Sing to the serpents,  
Seek the Charmed Egg!

*Druids (bowing with weird signs).* Great is the  
Queen.

Her Druids hear.

But shall no gift be made?

*Boadicca.* Yea . . . since Lactantius,  
God more than all gods,  
Will not be soothed  
By sheep or cattle,  
On your high altar  
Slay ye this maiden of Gaul!

[*Points to LAMORA, who cries out to her!*  
*then to BRUDE:*

*Lamora.* Nay, Queen, O pity!  
O, Brude, win pity!  
Let her not yield me  
Prey to the gods.  
Rather in battle  
'Gainst the hard Roman  
Would I be trampled  
Into the grave.



Trampled by war-hoofs . . .

Into a grave of blood!

*Boadicea.* Proud-lip! mocker!

Dare you sputter

Shame on the awful gods?

[*Strikes her down . . . BRUDE watches  
helpless.*

*Corlun (coming forward).* Kneel, Druids, kneel!

Then bear her away!

Meet me at midnight,

Druids' day,

Deep within Mona's wood.

[*They kneel, then go, bearing LAMORA.*

SCENE II: *Sunset. A rocky cave near the forest.*

*BRUDE* *pacing back and forth with restless muttering.*

*Brude.* O thou Lactantius,

Whom other gods

Worship with trembling,  
While their star-chariots  
Roll to the sea!  
Symbolled by circles,  
Endless in being,  
Dost thou love life-blood  
As Druids say?  
When the white maiden's  
Pierced on the altar  
Dost thou drink praises  
From her wide wound?  
So teach the seers,  
So did I, Brude, swear—  
Till I saw Lamora!  
Her eyes are love-fires,  
Her words are sorcery  
Stronger than god-laws!  
But . . . who comes hither?

*[Has heard a moan.*

Hither harasser  
Of these my thoughts?

Ha! is it Lamora  
Followed by Cormo?  
Curses like vampires  
Fall on his head!

[*Steps aside.*]

*Lamora (entering in despair).* Mother! sweet  
mother,

Far in the Eastland,  
Soon must thy daughter  
Pass from earth's day!  
Ne'er shall a boy-babe  
Suck from her bosom  
Valor to strangle  
Wolves in the lair!  
Never shall husband  
From the red war-fields  
Bring her the foeman's spoils!

*Cormo (behind her).* Lamora, proud one—

*Lamora.* Leave me, viper!

Stand from me farther!

Will you e'en now  
With tongue spit poison  
On my last ebbing hour?

*Cormo.* Nay, maiden, cruel,  
But I will aid thee.

Words are as smoke,  
Deeds as flame!

Hear! I will save thee  
From Druid talons

And bear thee whither thou wilt:

Give but thy vow to wed me!

*Lamora.* Wed thee?—thee? . . .

Never—while cliffs

O'er the plain jutting

Plight void death to the leaper!

Never while waves

Curl gray lips

Yearning to gulf the doomed!

*Cormo.* Then thou shalt die! shalt die!  
Druids shall gash

Streamings of life  
Out of thy shrinking sides!  
*Lamora.* Then die I will! . . .  
But not thro fear,  
Coward of Britons,  
Will I e'er mother  
Child of thy loins.  
Rather let flames,  
Tongues of the gods,  
Suck the red life from my breast.  
Yea, let the gods,  
Glutless as men,  
And, as women,  
Traacherous, vain—  
Strike, at the call of thy Queen!

[*Goes, followed by CORMO.*

*Brude (coming forward).* No! thou shalt live,  
live, live!

[*Goes into cave, then comes forth with a  
knife.*

SCENE III: *Midnight. A stormy glade in the forest. On one side a cromlech whereon LAMORA lies bound: CORLUN beside her with an uplifted blade of gold. On the other side Druids—around a pot of serpents over a fire in the cavern of an uprooted tree.*

[BRUDE is among them, watchful.

*Corlun (chanting).* Orpo!—Ai!—  
 Now shall the Roman  
 Backward be driven,  
     O gods!  
 Orpo!—Ai!—  
 For to the death stroke  
 Lamora's given,  
     O gods!  
 Orpo! Ai!—  
 Her skyward soul  
 Thro the dank dark shall rise,  
 As the morn's sun

Unto your halls  
Far o'er the skies.  
And she shall say  
Thus Druids crave  
Help of the helpers of men.

*Druids (incanting around the cavern). Orpo!—*

*Ai!—*

Serpents are spawned  
Of devils' spit,  
O gods!  
Orpo!—Ai!—  
Spit boiled with blood  
In caverns lit  
By fungous fangs  
From Mona's wood.

*[They circle. BRUDE steals behind CORLUN.]*

Orpo!—Ai!—  
Serpents are spawned  
In magic broth  
To coil and wriggle,

Writhe and twist;  
Till their froth  
Becomes a mist,  
Till the mist  
An egg shall form—  
Charm that Druids prize.

*Brude (with a sudden cry).* Corlun, the gods  
Wait for thy soul!

*[Slays him.*

Lamora, fly!  
With me, fly—  
Thro the black forest!

*[Has cut her bonds.*

Great Lactantius,  
Maker of gods,  
Loves *not* the maiden's death-cry!

*[They escape.*

*Druids (in terror).* Corlun is slain!  
Corlun! slain!  
Woe to the Druids!



Woe from the heavens!

Woe from the ireful Queen!

*[They pursue confusedly.]*

SCENE IV: *Dawn; far in the forest. Enter BRUDE and LAMORA faintingly to a spot where HORMA, the hag, unscen by them is gathering herbs.*

*Lamora.* Strength no more  
Wings me for flight.  
With hunger of sleep I faint.

*[Falls.]*

*Brude (sinking by her).* Yet ere thy sleep,  
Maid like the dawn,  
List to my heart's wild uttering!  
All I have dared  
Was for thy love—  
Tho but to love thee  
Would I dare all!

*Lamora.* Ah! What is love,  
Brude wise and noble?

Is it this burning  
Far in my breast  
Melting my soul to thine?  
Is it this power  
Hid in my eyes  
Shaping thy face  
On hill and cloud?  
Is it this whisper,  
As of sea-waves,  
Singing thy name to me?  
Yea! So now we may sleep.

*[They lie down. HORMA, the hag, who has  
heard them, creeps maundering up and  
gazes at them.]*

*Horma.* Owl and eaglet?  
Have they fled?  
Then let witch-toads sing!  
Oaths forgotten,  
Would they wed?  
Then let bull-bats,

Wild a-wing,  
Flap the moon from heaven!  
Deep in the forest—  
Ha! ho! ho!

*[Breaks off, hearing shouts. Continues.]*

They'll be slain!

*[Fleeing.]*

They'll be slain!

*Brude (waking).* What was my dream? . . .

*[Hears the shouts.]*

Lamora! Lamora!

*[They start up and look at each other.]*

*Silence.*

*Lamora (at length).* So was it doomed.

Now we must cross

Thro the death-fog

Unto the blest.

But side by side,  
And ere they come.

*[Hands him her knife.*

Here we shall die.  
But in the Meadows  
Where the thin shades  
Wander and wander,  
Ever in love we'll live!  
Fold first thy arms around me.

*[They embrace.*

*Brude (starting from her). Hear! they have  
come—*

Cormo! The Queen! . . .

*Lamora.* Then strike! for thy face  
Alone would I see in death!

*Brude (killing her then himself). Cormo! . . .  
Queen! . . . Death!*

Ye shall never . . . tear us apart!

*[Falls with her in his arms, as BOADICEA  
and warriors enter.*

*Boadicea* (*secing them*). Dead! . . . Leave  
them, food  
For beast and bird!  
Leave them! away! away!

*[All go with pride and spurning.]*

This page in the original text is blank.

# SONG-SURF

FIRST PUBLISHED 1900



To  
MY SISTERS

This page in the original text is blank.

## WITH OMAR

I SAT with Omar by the Tavern door,  
Musing the mystery of mortals o'er,  
    And soon with answers alternate we strove  
Whether, beyond death, Life hath any shore.

*“Come, fill the cup,” said he. “In the fire of Spring  
Your Winter-garment of Repentance fling.*

*The Bird of Time has but a little way  
To flutter — and the Bird is on the Wing.”*

“The Bird of Time?” I answered. “Then have I  
No heart for Wine. Must we not cross the Sky  
    Unto Eternity upon his wings —  
Or, failing, fall into the Gulf and die?”

*“ Ay; so, for the Glories of this World sigh some,  
As now, for the Prophet’s Paradise to come,  
You sigh. Take, Friend, the Cash — the Credit leave,  
Nor heed the rumble of a distant Drum ! ”*

*“ And, having taken, spend — without a throe —  
All on the Wine? spend all? The while I know  
A possible To-morrow may bring thirst  
For Drink but Credit then shall cause to flow? ”*

*“ Yea, make the most of what you yet may spend,  
Before we too into the Dust descend;  
Dust into Dust, and under Dust, to lie,  
Sans Wine, sans Song, sans Singer, and—sans End ! ”*

*“ Into the Dust we shall descend — we must.  
But can the soul not break the crumbling Crust  
In which he is encaged? To hope or to  
Despair he will — which is more wise or just? ”*

*“The worldly hope men set their hearts upon  
Turns Ashes — or it prospers: and anon,  
Like Snow upon the Desert’s dusty Face,  
Lighting a little hour or two — is gone.”*

“Like Snow it comes — to cool one burning Day;  
And like it goes — for all our plea or sway.  
But flooding tears nor Wine can ever purge  
The Vision it has brought to us away.”

*“But to this world we come and Why not knowing,  
Nor Whence, like water willy-nilly flowing;  
And out of it, as Wind along the waste,  
We know not Whither, willy-nilly blowing.”*

“True, little do we know of *Why* or *Whence*.  
But is forsooth our Darkness evidence  
There is no Light? — the worm may see no star  
Tho’ heaven with myriad multitudes be dense.”

*“But, all unasked, we’re hither hurried Whence?  
And, all unasked, we’re Whither hurried hence?  
O, many a cup of this forbidden Wine  
Must drown the memory of that insolence.”*

“Yet can not — ever! For it is forbid  
Still by that quenchless Soul within us hid,  
Which cries, ‘Feed — feed me not on Wine alone,  
For to Immortal Banquets I am bid.’ ”

*“Well oft I think that never blows so red  
The Rose as where some buried Cæsar bled:  
That every Hyacinth the Garden wears  
Dropt in her lap from some once lovely Head.”*

“Then if, from the dull Clay thro’ with Life’s throes,  
More beautiful spring Hyacinth and Rose,  
Will the great Gardener for the uprooted soul  
Find Use no sweeter than — useless Repose?”

*“We cannot know — so fill the cup that clears  
 To-day of past regret and future fears:  
 To-morrow! — Why, To-morrow we may be  
 Ourselves with Yesterday's sev'n thousand Years.”*

“No Cup there is to bring oblivion  
 More during than Regret and Fear — no, none!  
 For Wine that's Wine to-day may change and be  
 Marah before to-morrow's Sands have run.”

*“Myself when young did eagerly frequent  
 Doctor and Saint, and heard great argument  
 About it and about: but evermore  
 Came out by the same Door where in I went.”*

“The doors of Argument may lead Nowhither,  
 Reason become a Prison where may wither  
 From sunless eyes the Infinite, from hearts  
 All Hope, when their sojourn too long is thither.”

*“Up from Earth’s Centre thro’ the Seventh Gate  
I rose, and on the throne of Saturn sate,  
And many a Knot unravelled by the Road —  
But not the Master-knot of Human fate.”*

“The Master-knot knows but the Master-hand  
That scattered Saturn and his countless Band  
Like seeds upon the unplanted heaven’s Air:  
The Truth we reap from them is Chaff thrice fanned.”

*“Yet if the Soul can fling the Dust aside  
And naked on the air of Heaven ride,  
Wer’t not a shame — wer’t not a shame for him  
In this clay carcass crippled to abide?”*

“No, for a day bound in this Dust may teach  
More of the Sáki’s Mind than we can reach  
Through æons mounting still from Sky to Sky —  
May open through all Mystery a breach.”



*“You speak as if Existence closing your  
Account, and mine, should know the like no more;  
The Eternal Saki from that Bowl has poured  
Millions of bubbles like us, and will pour.”*

“Bubbles we are, pricked by the point of Death.  
But, in each bubble, may there be no Breath  
That lifts it and at last to Freedom flies,  
And o'er all heights of Heaven wandereth?”

*“A moment's halt — a momentary taste  
Of Being from the Well amid the Waste —  
And Lo — the phantom Caravan has reached  
The Nothing it set out from — Oh, make haste!”*

“And yet it should be — it should be that we  
Who drink shall drink of Immortality.  
The Master of the Well has much to spare:  
Will He say, ‘Taste’ -- then shall we no more be?”

*“The Moving Finger writes; and having writ,  
Moves on; nor all your Piety nor Wit  
Shall lure it back to cancel half a line,  
Nor all your tears wash out a word of it.”*

“And were it other, might we not erase  
The Letter of some Sorrow in whose place  
No truer sounding, we should fail to spell  
The Heart which yearns behind the mock-world’s  
Face?”

*“Well, this I know; whether the one True Light  
Kindle to Love, or Wrath-consume me, quite,  
One flash of it within the Tavern caught  
Better than in the Temple lost outright.”*

“In Temple or in Tavern ’t may be lost.  
And everywhere that Love hath any Cost  
It may be found; the Wrath it seems is but  
A Cloud whose Dew should make its power most.”

*“But see His Presence thro’ Creation’s veins  
Running Quicksilver-like eludes your pains;  
Taking all shapes from Máh to Máhi; and  
They change and perish all — but He remains.”*

“All — it may be. Yet lie to sleep, and lo,  
The soul seems quenched in Darkness — is it so?  
Rather believe what seemeth not than seems  
Of Death — until we know — *until we know.*”

*“So wastes the Hour — gone in the vain pursuit  
Of This and That we strive o’er and dispute.  
Better be jocund with the fruitful Grape  
Than sadden after none, or bitter, Fruit.”*

“Better — unless we hope that grief is thrown  
Across our Path by urgency of the Unknown,  
Lest we may think we have no more to live  
And bide content with dim-lit Earth alone.”

*“Then, strange, is't not? that of the myriads who  
Before us passed the door of Darkness through  
Not one returns to tell us of the Road,  
Which to discover we must travel too?”*

“Such is the Ban! but even though we heard  
Love in Life's All we still should crave the word  
Of one returned. Yet none is *sure*, we know,  
Though they lie deep, they are by Death deterred.”

*“Send then thy Soul through the Invisible  
Some letter of the After-life to spell:  
And by and by thy Soul returned to thee  
But answers, ‘I myself am Heaven and Hell.’ ”*

“From the Invisible, he does. But sent  
Thro' Earth, where living Goodness tho' 'tis blent  
With Evil dures, may he not read the Voice,  
‘To make thee but for Death were toil ill spent’?”

*“Well, when the Angel of the darker drink  
At last shall find us by the river-brink  
And offering his Cup invite our souls  
Forth to our lips to quaff, we shall not shrink.”*

“No. But if in the sable Cup we knew  
Death without waking were the wilful brew,  
Nobler it were to curse as Coward Him  
Who roused us into light — then light withdrew.”

*“Then Thou who didst with pitfall and with gin  
Beset the Road I was to wander in,  
Thou wilt not with Predestined Evil round  
Enmesh, and then impute my fall to sin.”*

“He will not. If one evil we endure  
To ultimate Debasing, oh, be sure  
'Tis not of Him predestined, and the sin  
Not His nor ours — but Fate's He could not cure.”

*“Yet, ah, that Spring should vanish with the Rose!  
That Youth’s sweet-scented Manuscript should close!  
The Nightingale that on the branches sang,  
Ah, whence, and whither flown again, who knows?”*

“So does it seem — no other joys like these!  
Yet Summer comes, and Autumn’s honoured ease;  
And wintry Age, is’t ever whisperless  
Of that Last Spring, whose Verdure may not cease?”

*“Still, would some winged Angel ere too late  
Arrest the yet unfolded roll of Fate,  
And make the stern Recorder otherwise  
Enregister, or quite obliterate!”*

“To otherwise enregister believe  
He toils eternally, nor asks Reprieve.  
And could Creation perfect from his hands  
Have come at Dawn, none overmuch should grieve.”

So till the wan and early scent of day  
We strove, and silent turned at last away,  
Thinking how men in ages yet unborn  
Would ask and answer — trust and doubt and pray.

## J A E L

J E H O V A H ! Jehovah ! art Thou not stronger than gods  
of the heathen ?

I slew him, that Sisera, prince of the host Thou  
dost hate.

But fear of his blood is upon me, about me is  
breath

His spirit — by night and by day come voices that  
wait.

Athirst and affrightened he fled from the star-  
wrought waters of Kishon.

His face was as wool when he swooned at the door  
of my tent.

The Lord hath given him into the hand of per-  
dition,



I smiled — but he saw not the face of my cunning  
intent.

He thirsted for water: I fed him the curdless milk  
of the cattle.

He lay in the tent under purple and crimson of  
Tyre.

He slept and he dreamt of the surge and storming  
of battle.

Ah ha! but he woke not to waken Jehovah's ire.

He slept as he were a chosen of Israel's God Al-  
mighty.

A dog out of Canaan! — thought he I was woman  
alone?

I slipt like an asp to his ear and laughed for the  
sight he

Would give when the carrion kites should tear to his  
bone.

I smote thro' his temple the nail, to the dust, a  
worm, did I bind him.

My heart was a-leap with rage and a-quiver with  
scorn.

And I danced with a holy delight before and behind  
him —

I that am called blessèd o'er all unto Judah born.

“Aye, come, I will show thee, O Barak, a woman is  
more than a warrior,”

I cried as I lifted the door wherein Sisera lay.

“To me did he fly and I shall be called his de-  
stroyer —

I, Jael, who am subtle to find for the Lord a way!”

“Above all the daughters of men be blest — of  
Gilead or Asshur.”

Sang Deborah, prophetess, then, from her waving  
palm.

“ Behold her, ye people, behold her the heathen’s  
abasher,  
Behold her the Lord hath uplifted — behold and be  
calm!

“ The mother of him at the window looks out thro’  
the lattice to listen —  
Why roll not the wheels of his chariot? why does he  
stay?  
Shall he not return with the booty of battle, and  
glisten  
In songs of his triumph — ye women, why do ye not  
say? ”

And I was as she who danced when the Seas were  
rended asunder  
And stood, until Egypt pressed in to be drowned  
unto death.  
My breasts were as fire with the glory, the rocks  
that were under

My feet grew quick with the gloating that beat in  
my breath.

At night I stole out where they cast him, a sop to  
the jackal and raven.

But his bones stood up in the moon and I shook  
with affright.

The strength shrank out of my limbs and I fell, a  
craven,

Before him — the nail in his temple gleamed bloodily  
bright.

Jehovah! Jehovah! art Thou not stronger than gods  
of the heathen?

I slew him, that Sisera, prince of the host Thou  
dost hate.

But fear of his blood is upon me, about me is  
breathen

His spirit — by day and by night come voices that  
wait.

I fly to the desert, I fly to the mountain — but they  
will not hide me.

His gods haunt the winds and the caves with ven-  
geance that cries

For judgment upon me; the stars in their courses  
deride me —

The stars Thou hast hung with a breath in the  
wandering skies.

Jehovah! Jehovah! I slew him, the scourge and sting  
of Thy Nation.

Take from me his spirit, take from me the voice of  
his blood.

With madness I rave — by day and by night, de-  
famation!

Jehovah, release me! Jehovah! if still Thou art God!

## TO THE SEA

ART thou enraged, O sea, with the blue peace  
Of heaven, so to uplift thine armèd waves,  
Thy billowing rebellion 'gainst its ease,  
And with Tartarean mutter from cold caves,  
From shuddering profundities where shapes  
Of awe glide thro' entangled leagues of ooze,  
To hoot thy watery omens evermore,  
And evermore thy moanings interfuse  
With seething necromancy and mad lore?

Or, dost thou labour with the drifting bones  
Of countless dead, thou mighty Alchemist,  
Within whose stormy crucible the stones  
Of sunk primordial shores, granite and schist,  
Are crumbled by thine all-abrasive beat?

With immemorial chanting to the moon,  
And cosmic incantation, dost thou crave  
Rest to be found not till thy wild be strewn  
Frigid and desert over earth's last grave?

Thou seemest with immensity mad, blind —  
With raving deaf, with wandering forlorn;  
Parent of Demogorgon whose dire mind  
Is night and earthquake, shapeless shame and  
scorn

Of the o'ermounting birth of Harmony.  
Bound in thy briny bed and gnawing earth  
With foamy writhing and fierce-panted tides,  
Thou art as Fate in torment of a dearth  
Of black disaster and destruction's strides.

And how thou dost drive silence from the  
world,  
Incarnate Motion of all mystery!  
Whose waves are fury-wings, whose winds are  
hurled

Whither thy Ghost tempestuous can see  
A desolate apocalypse of death.  
Oh, how thou dost drive silence from the world,  
With emerald overflowing, waste on waste  
Of flashing susurrations, dashed and swirled  
O'er isles and continents that shrink abased!

Nay, frustrate Hope art thou, of the Unknown,  
Gathered from primal mist and firmament;  
A surging shape of Life's unfathomed moan,  
Whelming humanity with fears unmeant.  
Yet do I love thee, O, above all fear,  
And loving thee unconquerably trust  
The runes that from thy ageless surfing start  
Would read, were they revealed, gust upon  
gust,  
That Immortality is might of heart!



## THE DAY-MOON

So wan, so unavailing,  
Across the vacant day-blue dimly trailing!

Last night, sphered in thy shining,  
A Circe — mystic destinies divining;

To-day but as a feather  
Torn from a seraph's wing in sinful weather,

Down-drifting from the portals  
Of Paradise, unto the land of mortals.

Yet do I feel thee awing  
My heart with mystery, as thy updrawing

Moves thro' the tides of Ocean  
And leaves lorn beaches barren of its motion;

Or strands upon near shallows  
The wreck whose weirded form at night  
unhallows

The fisher maiden's prayers —  
“For *him!* — that storms may take not  
unawares!”

So wan, so unavailing,  
Across the vacant day-blue dimly trailing!

But Night shall come atoning  
Thy phantom life thro' day, and high enthroning

Thee in her chambers arrased  
With star-hieroglyphs, leave thee unharassed

To glide with silvery passion,  
Till in earth's shadow swept thy glowings ashen.

## A SEA-GHOST

OH, fisher-fleet, go in from the sea  
And furl your wings.  
The bay is gray with the twilit spray  
And the loud surf springs.

The chill buoy-bell is rung by the hands  
Of all the drowned,  
Who know the woe of the wind and tow  
Of the tides around.

Go in, go in! Oh, haste from the sea,  
And let them rest —  
The throng who long for the air — still long,  
But are left unblest.

Aye, even as I, whose hands at the bell

Now labour most.

The tomb has gloom, but Oh, the doom

Of the drear sea-ghost!

He evermore must wander the ooze

Beneath the wave,

Forlorn — to warn of the tempest born,

And to save — to save!

Then go, go in! and leave us the sea,

For only so

Can peace release us and give us ease

Of our salty woe.

## ON THE MOOR

### I

I MET a child upon the moor  
A-wading down the heather;  
She put her hand into my own,  
We crossed the fields together.

I led her to her father's door —  
A cottage mid the clover.  
I left her — and the world grew poor  
To me, a childless rover.

### 2

I met a maid upon the moor,  
The morrow was her wedding.  
Love lit her eyes with lovelier hues  
Than the eve-star was shedding.

She looked a sweet good-bye to me,  
And o'er the stile went singing.  
Down all the lonely night I heard  
But bridal bells a-ringing.

## 3

I met a mother on the moor,  
By a new grave a-praying.  
The happy swallows in the blue  
Upon the winds were playing.

“Would I were in his grave,” I said,  
“And he beside her standing!”  
There was no heart to break if death  
For me had made demanding.

## THE CRY OF EVE

DOWN the palm-way from Eden in the mid-  
night  
Lay dreaming Eve by her outdriven mate,  
Pillowed on lilies that still told the sweet  
Of birth within the Garden's ecstasy.  
Pitiful round her face that could not lose  
Its memory of God's perfecting was strewn  
Her troubled hair, and sigh grieved after sigh  
Along her loveliness in the white moon.  
Then sudden her dream, too cruelly impent  
With pain, broke and a cry fled shuddering  
Into the wounded stillness from her lips—  
As, cold, she fearfully felt for his hand,  
And tears, that had before ne'er visited  
Her lids with anguish, drew from her the moan:

“Oh, Adam! What have I dreamed?  
Now do I understand His words, so dim  
To creatures that had quivered but with bliss!  
Since at the dusk thy kiss to me, and I  
Wept at caresses that were once all joy,  
I have slept, seeing through Futurity  
The uncreated ages visibly!  
Foresuffering phantoms crowded in the womb  
Of Time, and all with lamentable mien  
Accusing, without mercy, thee and me!  
And without pity! for tho’ some were far  
From birth, and had no name, others were near –  
Sodom and dark Gomorrah—from whose flames  
Fleeing one turned . . . how like her look to mine  
When the tree’s horror trembled on my taste!  
And Babylon upbuilded on our sin;  
And Nineveh, a city sinking slow  
Under a shroud of sandy centuries  
That hid me not from the buried cursing eyes  
Of women who e’er-bitterly gave birth!



Ah, to be mother of all misery!  
To be first-called out of the earth and fail  
For a whole world! To shame maternity  
For women evermore — women whose tears  
Flooding the night, no hope can wipe away!  
To see the wings of Death, as, Adam, thou  
Hast not, endlessly beating, and to hear  
The swooning ages suffer up to God!  
And Oh, that birth-cry of a guiltless child  
In it are sounding of our sin and woe,  
With prophesy of ill beyond all years!  
Yearning for beauty never to be seen —  
Beatitude redeemless evermore!  
That birth-cry! soon so sadly to awake  
That thou, Adam, dear fallen thought of God,  
Thou, when thou too shalt hear humanity  
Cry in thy child, wilt groaning wish the world  
Back in unsummoned Void! and, woe! wilt fill  
God's ear with troubled wonder and unrest!"

Softly he soothed her straying hair, and kissed  
The fever from her lips. Over the palms  
The sad moon poured her peace into their eyes,  
Till Sleep, the angel of forgetfulness,  
Folded again dark wings above their rest.

## MARY AT NAZARETH

I KNOW, Lord, Thou hast sent Him —  
Thou art so good to me! —  
But Thou hast only lent Him,  
His heart's for Thee!

I dared — Thy poor hand-maiden —  
Not ask a prophet-child:  
Only a boy-babe laden  
For earth — and mild.

But this one Thou hast given  
Seems not for earth — or me!  
His lips flame truth from heaven,  
And vanity

Seem all my thoughts and prayers  
When He but speaks Thy Law;  
Out of my heart the tares  
Are torn by awe!

I cannot look upon Him,  
So strangely burn His eyes —  
Hath not some grieving drawn Him  
From Paradise?

For Thee, for Thee I'd live, Lord!  
Yet oft I almost fall  
Before Him — Oh, forgive, Lord,  
My sinful thrall!

But e'en when He was nursing,  
A baby at my breast,  
It seemed He was dispersing  
The world's unrest.

Thou bad'st me call Him "Jesus,"  
And from our heavy sin  
I know He shall release us,  
    From Sheol win.

But, Lord, forgive! the yearning  
That He may sometimes be  
Like other children, learning  
    Beside my knee,

Or playing, prattling, seeking  
For help — comes to my heart. . . .  
Ah sinful, Lord, I'm speaking —  
    How good Thou art!

## ADELIL

PROUD Adelil! Proud Adelil!

Why does she lie so cold?

(I made her shrink, I made her reel,  
I made her white lids fold.)

We sat at banquet, many maids,  
She like a Valkyr free.

(I hated the glitter of her braids,  
I hated her blue eye's glee!)

In emerald cups was poured the mead;  
Icily blew the night.

(But tears unshed and woes that bleed  
Brew bitterness and spite.)

“A goblet to my love!” she cried,  
“Prince where the sea-winds fly!”  
(Her love! — it was for that he died,  
And for it she should die.)

She lifted the cup and drank — she saw  
A heart within its lees.  
(I laughed like the dead who feel the thaw  
Of summer in the breeze.)

They looked upon her stricken still,  
And sudden they grew appalled.  
 (“It is thy lover’s heart!” I shrill  
As the sea-crow to her called.)

Palely she took it — did it give  
Ease there against her breast?  
(Dead — dead she swooned, but I cannot  
live,  
And dead I shall not rest.)

## INTIMATION

ALL night I smiled as I slept,  
For I heard the March-wind feel  
Blindly about in the trees without  
For buds to heal.

All night in dreams, for I smelt,  
In the rain-wet woods and fields,  
The coming flowers and the glad green hours  
That summer yields.

All night — and when at dawn  
I woke with the blue-bird's cheep,  
Winter with all its chill and pall  
Seemed but a sleep.



## IN JULY

THIS path will tell me where dark daisies dance  
To the white sycamores that dell them in;  
Where crow and flicker cry melodious din,  
And blackberries in ebon ripeness glance  
Luscious enticings under briery green.  
It will slip under coppice limbs that lean  
Brushingly as the slow-belled heifer pants  
    Toward weedy water-plants  
That shade the pool-sunk creek's reluctant trance.

I shall find bell-flower spires beside the gap  
And lady phlox within the hollow's cool;  
Cedar with sudden memories of Yule  
Above the tangle tipped with blue skullcap.  
The high hot mullein fond of the full sun

Will watch and tell the low mint when I've won  
The hither wheat where idle breezes nap,  
    And fluffy quails entrap  
Me from their brood that crouch to escape mishap.

Then I shall reach the mossy water-way  
That gullies the dense hill up to its peak,  
There dally listening to the eerie eke  
Of drops into cool chalices of clay.  
Then on, for elders odorously will steal  
My senses till I climb up where they heal  
The livid heat of its malingering ray,  
    And wooingly betray  
To memory many a long-forgotten day.

There I shall rest within the woody peace  
Of afternoon. The bending azure frothed  
With silveryness, the sunny pastures swathed,  
Fragrant with morn-mown clover and seed-fleece;  
The hills where hung mists muse, and Silence calls

To Solitude thro' aged forest halls,  
Will waft into me their mysterious ease,  
    And in the wind's soft cease  
I shall hear hintings of eternities.

## FROM ABOVE

WHAT do I care if the trees are bare  
And the hills are dark  
And the skies are gray.

What do I care for chill in the air  
For crows that cark  
At the rough wind's way.

What do I care for the dead leaves there —  
Or the sullen road  
By the sullen wood.

There's heart in my heart  
To bear my load!  
So enough, the day is good!

## BY THE INDUS

THOU art late, O Moon,  
Late,  
I have waited thee long.  
The nightingale's flown to her nest,  
Sated with song.  
The champak hath no odour more  
To pour on the wind as he passeth o'er —  
But my heart it will not rest.

Thou art late, O Love,  
Late,  
For the moon is a-wane.  
The kusa-grass sighs with my sighs,  
Burns with my pain.

The lotus leans her head on the stream —  
Shall I not lean to thy breast and dream,  
    Dream ere the night-cool dies?

Thou art late, O Death,  
    Late,  
    For he did not come!  
A pariah is my heart,  
    Cast from him — dumb!  
I cannot cry in the jungle's deep —  
Is it not time for the Tomb — and Sleep?  
    O Death, strike with thy dart!

## EVOCATION

*(Nikko, Japan, 1905)*

DIM thro' the mist and cryptomeria  
Booms the temple bell,  
Down from the tomb of Iêyasü  
Yearning, as a knell.

Down from the tomb where many an æon  
Silently has knelt;  
Many a pilgrimage of millions —  
Still about it felt.

Still, for I see them gather ghostly  
Now as the numb sound  
Floats, an unearthly necromancy,  
From the past's dead ground.

See the invisible vast millions,  
Hear their soundless feet  
Climbing the shrine-ways to the gilded  
Carven temple's seat.

And, one among them — pale among them —  
Passes waning by.

What is it tells me mystically  
That strange one was I? . . .

Weird thro' the mist and cryptomeria  
Dies the bell — 'tis dumb.  
After how many lives returning  
Shall I hither come?

Hither again! and climb the votive  
Ever mossy ways?

Who shall the gods be then, the millions  
Meek, entreat or praise?



## THE CHILD GOD GAVE

“GIVE me a little child  
To draw this dreary want out of my breast,”

I cried to God.

“Give, for my days beat wild  
With loneliness that will not rest  
But under the still sod!”

It came — with groping lips  
And little fingers stealing aimlessly  
About my heart.

I was like one who slips  
A-sudden into Ecstasy  
And thinks ne'er to depart.

“Soon he will smile,” I said,  
“And babble baby love into my ears —

How it will thrill!"  
 I waited — Oh, the dread,  
 The clutching agony, the fears! —  
 He was so strange and still.

Did I curse God and rave  
 When they came shrinkingly to tell me 'twas  
 A witless child?  
 No . . . I . . . I only gave  
 One cry . . . just one. . . I think . . .  
 because . . .  
 You know . . . he never smiled.

## THE WINDS

THE East Wind is a Bedouin,  
    And Nimbus is his steed;  
Out of the dusk with the lightning's thin  
Blue scimitar he flies afar,  
    Whither his rovings lead.  
    The Dead Sea waves  
    And Egypt caves  
    Of mummied silence laugh  
When he mounts to quench the Siroc's stench  
    And to wrench  
    From his clutch the tyrant's staff,

The West Wind is an Indian brave  
    Who scours the Autumn's crest.  
Dashing the forest down as a slave,

He tears the leaves from its limbs and weaves  
A maelstrom for his breast.  
Out of the night  
Crying to fright  
The earth he swoops to spoil —  
There is furious scathe in the whirl of his wrath,  
In his path  
There is misery and moil.

The North Wind is a Viking — cold  
And cruel, armed with death!  
Born in the doomful deep of the old  
Ice Sea that froze ere Ymir rose  
From Nifheim's ebon breath.  
And with him sail  
Snow, Frost, and Hail,  
Thanes mighty as their lord,  
To plunder the shores of Summer's stores —  
And his roar 's  
Like the sound of Chaos' horde.

The South Wind is a Troubadour;  
    The Spring 's his serenade.  
Over the mountain, over the moor,  
He blows to bloom from the winter's tomb  
    Blossom and leaf and blade.  
    He ripples the throat  
    Of the lark with a note  
Of lilting love and bliss,  
And the sun and the moon, the night and the noon,  
    Are a-swoon —  
    When he woos them with his kiss.

## TRANSCENDED

I WHO was learnèd in death's lore  
Oft held her to my heart  
And spoke of days when we should love no more —  
In the long dust, apart.

“Immortal?” No — it could not be,  
Spirit with flesh must die.  
Tho' heart should pray and hope make endless plea,  
Reason would still outcry.

She died. They wrapped her in the dust —  
I heard the dull clod's dole,  
And then I knew she lived — that death's dark lust  
Could never touch her soul!

## LOVE'S WAY TO CHILDHOOD

WE ARE not lovers, you and I,  
    Upon this sunny lane,  
But children who have never known  
    Love's joy or pain.

The trees we pass, the summer brook,  
    The bird that o'er us darts —  
We do not know 'tis they that thrill  
    Our childish hearts.

The earth-things have no name for us,  
    The ploughing means no more  
Than that they like to walk the fields  
    Who plough them o'er.

The road, the wood, the heaven, the hills  
Are not a World to-day —  
But just a place God's made for us  
In which to play.



## AUTUMN

I KNOW her not by fallen leaves  
Or resting heaps of hay;  
Or by the sheathing mists of mauve  
That soothe the fiery day.

I know her not by plumping nuts,  
By redded hips and haws,  
Or by the silence hanging sad  
Under the wind's sere pause.

But by her sighs I know her well —  
They are like Sorrow's breath;  
And by this longing, strangely still,  
For something after death.

## SHINTO

*(Miyajima, Japan, 1905)*

LOWLY temple and torii,  
Shrine where the spirits of wind and wave  
Find the worship and glory we  
Give to the one God great and grave —

Lowly temple and torii,  
Shrine of the dead, I hang my prayer  
Here on your gates — the story see  
And answer out of the earth and air.

For I am Nature's child, and you  
Were by the children of Nature built.  
Ages have on you smiled — and dew  
On you for ages has been spilt —

Till you are beautiful as Time  
Mossy and mellowing ever makes:  
Wrapped as you are in lull — or rhyme  
Of sounding drum that sudden breaks.

This is my prayer then, this: that I  
Too may reverence all of life,  
Lose no beauty beneath its sky,  
Miss no word of it wonder-rife!

That I may build, with music, fair  
Temples and torii on each place  
That I have loved — Oh, hear it, Air,  
Ocean and Earth, and grant your grace!

## MAYA

*(Hiroshima, Japan, 1905)*

PALE sampans up the river glide,  
With set sails vanishing and slow;  
In the blue west the mountains hide,  
As visions that too soon will go.

Across the rice-lands, flooded deep,  
The peasant peacefully wades on —  
As, in unfurrowed vales of sleep,  
A phantom out of voidness drawn.

Over the temple cawing flies  
The crow with carrion in his beak.  
Buddha within lifts not his eyes  
In pity or reproof meek;

Nor, in the bamboos, where they bow  
A respite from the blinding sun,  
The old priest — dreaming painless how  
Nirvana's calm will come when won.

“All is illusion, *Maya*, all  
The world of will,” the spent East seems  
Whispering in me; “and the call  
Of Life is but a call of dreams.”

## A JAPANESE MOTHER

*(In Time of War)*

THE young stork sleeps in the pine-tree tops,  
Down on the brink of the river.

My baby sleeps by the bamboo copse —  
The bamboo copse where the rice field stops:  
The bamboos sigh and shiver.

The white fox creeps from his hole in the hill;  
I must pray to Inari.

I hear her calling me low and chill —  
Low and chill when the wind is still  
At night and the skies hang starry.

And ever she says, "He's dead! he's dead!  
Your lord who went to battle.

How shall your baby now be fed,  
Ukibo fed, with rice and bread —  
What if I hush his prattle?"

The red moon rises as I slip back,  
And the bamboo stems are swaying.  
Inari was deaf — and yet the lack,  
The fear and lack, are gone, and the rack,  
I know not why — with praying.

For though Inari cared not at all,  
Some other god was kinder.  
I wonder why he has heard my call,  
My giftless call — and what shall befall? . . .  
Hope has but left me blinder!

## THE DEAD GODS

I THOUGHT I plunged into that dire Abyss  
Which is Oblivion, the house of Death.  
I thought there blew upon my soul the breath  
Of time that was but never more can be.

Ten thousand years within its void I thought  
I lay, blind, deaf, and motionless, until —  
Though with no eye nor ear — I felt the thrill  
Of seeing, heard its phantoms move and sigh.

First one beside me spoke, in tones that told  
He once had been a god — “Persephone,  
Tear from thy brow its withered crown, for we  
Are king and queen of Tartarus no more;



“And that wan, shrivelled sceptre in thy hand,  
Why dost thou clasp it still? Cast it away,  
For now it hath no virtue that can sway  
Dull shades or drive the Furies to their spoil.

“Cast it away, and give thy palm to mine:  
Perchance some unobliterated spark  
Of memory shall warm this dismal Dark.  
Perchance — Vain! vain! love could not light such  
gloom.”

He sank. . . . Then in great ruin by him moved  
Another as in travail of some thought  
Near unto birth; and soon from lips distraught  
By aged silence, fell, with hollow woe:

“Ah, Pluto, dost thou, one time lord of Styx  
And Acheron make moan of night and cold?  
Were we upon Olympus as of old  
Laughter of thee would rock its festal height.

“ But think, think thee of me, to whom or gloom  
Or cold were more unknown than impotence!  
See the unhurlèd thunderbolt brought hence  
To mock me when I dream I still am Jove!”

Too much it was: I withered in the breath;  
And lay again ten thousand lifeless years;  
And then my soul shook, woke — and saw three biers  
Chiselled of solid night majestically.

The forms outlaid upon them were enwound  
As with the silence of eternity.  
Numbing repose dwelt o'er them like a sea,  
That long hath lost tide, wave and roar, in death.

“Ptah, Ammon, and Osiris are their names,”  
A spirit hieroglyphed unto my soul.  
“Ptah, Ammon, and Osiris — they who stole  
The heart of Egypt from the God of gods:

“Aye, they! — and see you! with them other wraiths  
Rise up around — Baal, Ormuzd, Indra, all  
Whom frightened ignorance and sin’s appall  
Have given birth, close-huddled in despair.”

Their eyes were fixed upon a cloven slope  
Down whose descent still other forms a-fresh  
From earth were drawn, by the unceasing mesh  
Of Time to their irrevocable end.

“They are the gods,” one said — “the gods whom  
men  
Still taunt with wails for help.”— Then a deep light  
Upbore me from the Gulf, and thro’ its might  
I heard the worlds cry, “God alone is God!”

## CALL TO YOUR MATE, BOB-WHITE

O CALL to your mate, bob-white, bob-white,  
And I will call to mine.

Call to her by the meadow-gate,  
And I will call by the pine.

Tell her the sun is hid, bob-white,  
The windy wheat sways west.  
Whistle again, call clear and run  
To lure her out of her nest.

For when to the copse she comes, shy bird  
With Mary down the lane  
I'll walk, in the dusk of the locust tops,  
And be her lover again.

Ay, we will forget our hearts are old,  
And that our hair is gray.  
We'll kiss as we kissed at pale sunset  
That summer's halcyon day.

That day, can it fade? . . . ah, bob, bob-white,  
Still calling — calling still?  
We're coming — a-coming, bent and weighed,  
But glad with the old love's thrill!

## THE DYING POET

SWING in thy splendour, O silent sun,  
Drawing my heart with thee over the west!  
Done is its day as thy day is done,  
    Fallen its quest!

Swoon into purple and rose, then die:  
Tho' to arise again out of the dawn:  
Die as I praise thee, ere thro' the Dark Lie  
    Of death I am drawn!

Sunk? art thou sunken? how great was life!  
I like a child could cry for it again —  
Cry for its beauty, pang, fleeting and strife,  
    Its women, its men!

For, how I drained it with love and delight!  
Opened its heart with the magic of grief!  
Reaped every season — its day and its night!  
Loved every sheaf!

Aye, not a meadow my step has trod,  
Never a flower swung sweet to my face,  
Never a heart that was touched of God,  
But taught me its grace.

So from my lids then a moment yet,  
Fingering Death, hold off till I see  
Lifted by memory all that I met  
Under Time's lee.

All, to the coming, at last, of love! . . .  
Still you can answer, my heart, the thought!  
Still like a mountain-born rapid can move,  
Joyous, distraught! . . .

And, by her side again, walk, in the wood! —  
Come, O invisible Death with thy mask!  
Shall I not learn if she lives? and could  
I more of thee ask? . . .

Turn me away from the ashen west,  
Where love's sad planet unveils to the dusk.  
Something is stealing like light from my breast —  
Soul from its husk . . .

Soft! . . . Where the dead feel the buried dead,  
Where the high hermit-bell hourly tolls,  
Bury me, near to the haunting tread .  
Of life that o'errolls.



## THE OUTCAST

I DID not fear,  
But crept close up to Christ and said,  
“Is he not here?”

They drew me back —  
The seraphs who had never bled  
Of weary lack —

But still I cried,  
With torn robe, clutching at His feet,  
“Dear Christ! He died

“So long ago!  
Is he not here? Three days, unfleet  
As mortal flow

“Of time I’ve sought —  
Till Heaven’s amaranthine ways  
Seem as sere nought!”

A grieving stole  
Up from His heart and waned the gaze  
Of His clear soul

Into my eyes.

“He is not here,” troubled He sighed.  
“For none who dies

“Beliefless may  
Bend lips to this sin-healing Tide,  
And live alway.”

Then darkness rose  
Within me, and drear bitterness.  
Out of its throes

I moaned, at last,  
“Let me go hence! Take off the dress,  
The charms Thou hast

“Around me strown!  
Beliefless too am I without  
His love — and lone!”

Unto the Gate  
They led me, tho' with pitying doubt.  
I did not wait

But stepped across  
Its portal, turned not once to heed  
Or know my loss.

Then my dream broke,  
And with it every loveless creed —  
Beneath love's stroke.

## APRIL

A LAUGHTER of wind and a leaping of cloud,  
And April, oh, out under the blue!  
The brook is awake and the blackbird loud  
In the dew!

But how does the robin high in the beech,  
Beside the wood with its shake and toss,  
Know it — the frenzy of bluets to reach  
Thro' the moss!

And where did the lark ever learn his speech?  
Up, wildly sweet, he's over the mead!  
Is more than the rapture of earth can teach  
In its creed?

I never shall know — I never shall care!

'Tis, oh, enough to live and to love!

To laugh and warble and dream and dare

Are to prove!

## AUGUST GUESTS

THE wind slipt over the hill  
And down the valley.  
He dimpled the cheek of the rill  
With a cooling kiss.  
Then hid on the bank a-gee  
And began to rally  
The rushes — Oh,  
I love the wind for this!

A cloud blew out of the west  
And spilt his shower  
Upon the lily-bud crest  
And the clematis.  
Then over the virgin corn  
Besprinkled a dower  
Of dew-gems — And,  
I love the cloud for this!

## TO A DOVE

### I

THY mellow passioning amid the leaves,  
That tremble dimly in the summer dusk,  
Falls sad along the oatland's sallow sheaves  
And haunts above the runnel's voice a-husk  
With plashy willow and bold-wading reed.  
The solitude's dim spell it breaketh not,  
But softer mourns unto me from the mead  
Than airs that in the wood intoning start,  
Or breath of silences in dells begot  
To soothe some grief-wan soul with sin a-smart.

### 2

A votaress art thou of Simplicity,  
Who hath one fane — the heaven above thy nest;

One incense — love; one stealing litany  
Of peace from rivered vale and upland crest.  
Yea, thou art Hers, who makes prayer of the breeze,  
Hope of the cool upwelling from sweet soils,  
Faith of the darkening distance, charities  
Of vesper scents, and of the glow-worm's throb  
Joy whose first leaping rends the care-wound coils  
That would earth of its heavenliness rob.

## 3

But few, how few her worshippers! For we  
Cast at a myriad shrines our souls, to rise  
Beliefless, unanointed, bound not free,  
To sacrificing a vain sacrifice!  
Let thy lone innocence then quickly null  
Within our veins doubt-led and wrong desire—  
Or drugging knowledge that but fills o'erfull  
Of feverous mystery the days we drain!  
Be thy warm notes like an Orphean lyre  
To lead us to life's Arcady again!



## AT TINTERN ABBEY

(June, 1903)

O TINTERN, Tintern! evermore my dreams  
Troubled by thy grave beauty shall be born;  
Thy crumbling loveliness and ivy streams  
Shall speak to me for ever, from this morn;  
The wind-wild daws about thy arches drifting,  
Clouds sweeping o'er thy ruin to the sea,  
Gray Tintern, all the hills about thee, lifting  
Their misty waving woodland verdancy!

The centuries that draw thee to the earth  
In envy of thy desolated charm,  
The summers and the winters, the sky's girth  
Of sunny blue or bleakness, seek thy harm.

But would that I were Time, then only tender  
On thee my touch should fall as o'er I sped;  
Of every pillar would I be defender,  
Of every mossy window — of thy dead!

Thy dead beneath obliterated stones  
Upon the sod that is at last thy floor,  
Who list the Wye not as it lonely moans  
Nor heed thy Gothic shadows grieving o'er.  
O Tintern, Tintern! trysting-place, where never  
Are wanting mysteries that move the breast,  
I'll hear thy beauty calling, ah, for ever —  
Till sinks within me the last voice to rest!

## OH, GO NOT OUT

OH, GO NOT OUT UPON THE STORM,  
GO NOT, MY SWEET, TO SWALCHIE POOL!  
A WITCH THO' DEAD THY HEART MAY CHARM,  
AY, AND BEFOOL!

A WILD NIGHT 'TIS! HER LOVER'S MOAN,  
DOWN UNDER OOZE AND SALTY WEED,  
SHE'LL MAKE THEE HEAR — AND THEN HER OWN!  
TILL THOU SHALT HEED.

AND IT WILL SUCK UPON THY HEART —  
THE SORCERY WITHIN HER CRY —  
TILL MADNESS OUT OF THEE UPSTART,  
AND RAGE TO DIE.

For him she loved, she laughed to death!  
And as afloat his chill hand lay,  
“Ha, ha! to hell I sent his wraith!”  
Did she not say?

And from his finger strive to draw  
The ring that bound him to her spell?  
Till on her closed his hand whose awe  
No curse could quell?

Oh, yea! and tho' she struggled pale,  
Did it not hold her cold and fast,  
Till crawled the tide o'er rock and swale,  
To her at last?

Down in the pool where she was swept  
He holds her — Oh, go not a-near!  
For none has heard her cry but wept  
And died that year.

## HUMAN LOVE

WE SPOKE of God and Fate,  
And of that Life — which some await —  
    Beyond the grave.  
“It will be fair,” she said,  
“But love is here!  
I only crave thy breast  
Not God’s when I am dead.  
For He nor wants nor needs  
    My little love.  
But it may be, if I love thee  
And those whose sorrow daily bleeds,  
He knows — and somehow heeds!”

## THE VICTORY

OH, SEE! — the blows at his breast,  
The fangs at his back,  
The perils and pains that pressed,  
The doubts in a pack,  
That hunted to drag him down  
Have triumphed? and now  
He sinks, who climbed for the crown  
To the Summit's brow?

No! — though at the foot he lies,  
Fallen and vain,  
With gaze to the peak whose skies  
He could not attain,  
The victory is, with strength —  
No matter the past! —  
He'd dare it again, the dark length,  
And the fall at last!

## AT WINTER'S END

THE weedy fallows winter-worn,  
Where cattle shiver under sodden hay.  
The plough-lands long and lorn —  
    The fading day.

The sullen shudder of the brook,  
And winds that wring the writhen trees in vain  
For drearier sound or look —  
    The lonely rain.

The crows that train o'er desert skies  
In endless caravans that have no goal  
But flight — where darkness flies —  
    From Pole to Pole.

The sombre zone of hills around  
That shrink in misty mournfulness from sight,  
With sunset aureoles crowned —  
    Before the night.



## MOTHER-LOVE

THE seraphs would sing to her  
And from the River  
Dip her cool grails of radiant Life.  
The angels would bring to her,  
Sadly a-quiver,  
Laurels she never had won in earth-strife.

And often they'd fly with her  
O'er the star-spaces —  
Silent by worlds where mortals are pent.  
Yea, even would sigh with her,  
Sigh with wan faces!  
When she sat weeping of strange discontent

But one said, "Why weapest thou  
Here in God's heaven —  
Is it not fairer than soul can see?"

“ 'Tis fair, ah! — but keepest thou  
Not me depriven  
Of some one — somewhere — who needeth most  
me?

“For tho' the day never fades  
Over these meadows,  
Tho' He has robed me and crowned — yet, yet!  
Some love-fear for ever shades  
All with sere shadows —  
Had i no child *there* — whom I forget?”

## TO A WARBLER

“BEAUTY! all — all — is beauty?”

Was ever a bird so wrong!

“No young in the nest, no mate, no duty?”

Ribald! is this your song?

“Glad it is ended,” are you?

The Spring and its nuptial fear?

“And freedom is better than love?” beware you,

There will be May next year!

“Beauty!” again, still “beauty”?

Wait till the winter comes!

Till kestrel and hungry kite seek booty

And the bleak cold benumbs!

Wait? nay, fling it to heaven

The false little song you prate!

Too sweet are its fancies not to leaven

Even the rudest fate!

SONGS TO A. H. R.

I

THE WORLD'S, AND MINE

THE world may hear  
The wind at his trees,  
The lark in her skies,  
The sea on his leas;  
May hear Song rise  
So glad in its ringing  
That every star  
God has seems singing.  
But I have a music they never can know —  
The touch of you, soul of you, heart of you, Oh!  
All else that is said or sung 's but a part of you —  
Be it forever so!

## II

## LOVE-CALL IN SPRING

Not only the lark but the robin too  
(Oh, heart o' my heart, come into the wood!)  
Is singing the air to gladness new  
    As the breaking bud  
    And the freshet's flood!

Not only the peeping grass and the scent —  
(Oh, love o' my life, fly unto me here!)  
Of violets coming ere April's spent —  
    But the frog's shrill cheer  
    And the crow's wild jeer!

Not only the blue, not only the breeze,  
(Oh, soul o' my heart, why tarry so long!)  
But sun that is sweeter upon the trees  
    Than rills that throng  
    To the brooklet's song!

Oh, heart o' my heart, oh, heart o' my love,  
(Oh soul o' my soul, haste unto me, haste!)  
For spring is below and God is above —  
    But all is a waste  
    Without thee — haste!

## III

## MATING

THE bliss of the wind in the redbud ringing!  
    What shall we do with the April days!  
Kingcups soon will be up and swinging —  
    What shall we do with May's!

The cardinal flings, "They are made for mating!"  
    Out on the bough he flutters, a flame.  
Thrush-flutes echo, "For mating's elating!  
    Love is its other name!"

They know! know it! but better, oh, better,  
Dearest, than ever a bird in Spring,  
Know we to make each moment debtor  
Unto love's burgeoning!

## IV

## UNTOLD

COULD I, a poet,  
Implant the truth of you,  
Seize it and sow it  
As Spring on the world.  
There were no need  
To fling (forsooth) of you  
Fancies that only lovers heed!  
No, but unfurled,  
The bloom, the sweet of you,  
(As unto me they are opened oft)  
Would with their beauty's breath repeat of you  
All that my heart breathes loud or soft!



## V

## LOVE-WATCH

MY LOVE'S a guardian-angel  
Who camps about thy heart,  
Never to flee thine enemy,  
Nor from thee turn apart.

Whatever dark may shroud thee  
And hide thy stars away,  
With vigil sweet his wings shall beat  
About thee till the day.

## VI

## AT AMALFI

COME to the window, you who are mine,  
Waken! the night is calling.  
Sit by me here — with the moon's fair shine  
Into your deep eyes falling.

The sea afar is a fearful gloom;  
    Lean from the casement, listen!  
A near it breaks with a faery spume,  
    Spraying the rocks that glisten.

The little white town below lies deep  
    As eternity in slumber.  
O, you who are mine, how a glance can reap  
    Beauties beyond all number!

And, how as sails that at anchor ride  
    Our spirits rock together  
On a love-sea — lit as this tide  
    With tenderest star-weather!

On a love-sea — till the dawn's up,  
    Over the moon low-lying.  
Till we have drunk, soul-deep, the cup  
    Of a delight undying!

## THE ATONER

WINTER has come in sackcloth and ashes  
(Penance for Summer's enverdured sheaves).  
Bitterly, cruelly, bleakly he lashes  
His limbs that are naked of grass and leaves.

He moans in the forest for sins unforgiven  
(Sins of the revelous days of June) —  
Moans while the sun drifts dull from the heaven,  
Giftless of heat's beshriving boon.

Long must he mourn, and long be his scourging,  
(Long will the day-god aloof frown cold),  
Long will earth listen the rue of his dirging —  
Till the dark beads of his days are told.

## THE RAMBLE

DOWN a road that asters tangle,  
Thro' a gap where green-briar twines,  
By a path where dry leaves dangle,  
Sere, from the ivy vines,

We go — by sedgy fallows  
And along the stifled brook,  
Till it stops in lushy mallows  
Just at the bridge's crook.

And then, o'er fence, thro' thicket,  
To the mouth of the rough ravine;  
Where the weird leaf-hidden cricket  
Chirrs thro' the weirder green!

And we leap — as wildness tingles  
From the air into our blood —  
With a cry thro' golden dingles  
Hid in the heart of the wood

Of the wood, with winds a-wrestle!  
With the nut and acorn strown!  
Of the wood, where creepers trestle  
Tree unto tree o'ergrown!

And we climb the ledging summit  
Of the hill in sunny glee.  
For an hour we gaze off from it  
Into the sky's blue sea.

Till a bell and sunset's crimson  
Soon recall the homeward path.  
And we turn as the glory dims on  
The hay-field's mounded math.

Thro' the soft and silent twilight  
We come, to the stile at last,  
As the clear undying eyelight  
Of the stars tells day is past.

## RETURN

AH, IT was here — September  
And silence filled the air —  
I came last year to remember,  
And muse, hid away from care.  
It was here I came — the thistle  
Was trusting her seed to the wind;  
The quail in the croft gave whistle  
As now — and the fields lay thinned.

I know how the hay was steeping,  
Brown mows under mellow haze;  
How a frail cloud-flock was creeping  
As now over lone sky-ways.  
Just there where the catbird's calling  
Her mock-hurt note by the shed,  
The use-worn wain was stalling  
In the weedy brook's dry bed.

And the cricket, lone little chimer  
Of day-long dreams in the vines,  
Chirred on like a doting rhymer  
O'er-vain of his firstling lines.  
He's near me now by the aster,  
Beneath whose shadowy spray  
A sultry bee seeps faster  
As the sun slips down the day.

And there are the tall primroses  
Like maidens waiting to dance.  
They stood in the same shy poses  
Last year, as if to entrance  
The stately mulleins to waken  
From death and lead them around:  
And still they will stand untaken,  
Till drops their gold to the ground.

Yes, it was here — September  
And silence round me yearned.  
Again I've come to remember,



Again for musing returned  
To the searing fields' assuaging,  
And the falling leaves' sad balm:  
Away from the world's keen waging —  
To harvest and hills and calm.

## LISETTE

OH . . . there was love in her heart — no doubt  
of it —

Under the anger.

But see what came out of it!

Not a knave, he! — A petty rhyme-smatterer,  
Cloaking in languor  
And heartache to flatter her.

And just as a woman will — even the best of them —  
She yielded — brittle.  
God spare me the rest of them!

For! though but kisses — she swore! — he had of her,  
Was it so little?  
She thought 'twas not bad of her,

Said I would lavish a burning hour-full

On any grisette.

And silenced me, powerful!

But she was mine, and blood is inflammable —

For a Lisette!

My rage was undammable. . . .

Could a stiletto's one prick be prettier?

Look at the gaping.

No? — then you're her pitier!

Pah! she's the better, and I . . . I'm your  
prisoner.

Loose me the strapping —

I'll lay one more kiss on her.

## FROM ONE BLIND

I CANNOT say thy cheek is like the rose,  
Thy hair like rippled sunbeams, and thine eyes  
Like violets, April-rich and sprung of God.  
My barren gaze can never know what throes  
Such boons of beauty waken, tho' I rise  
Each day a-tremble with the ruthless hope  
That light will pierce my useless lids — then grope  
Till night, blind as the worm within his clod.

Yet unto me thou art not less divine,  
I touch thy cheek — and know the mystery hid  
Within the twilight breeze; I smooth thy hair  
And understand how slipping hours may twine  
Themselves into eternity: yea, rid  
Of all but love, I kiss thine eyes and seem  
To see all beauty God Himself may dream.  
Why then should I o'ermuch for earth-sight care?

## IN A CEMETERY

WHEN Autumn's melancholy robes the land  
With silence, and sad fadings mystical  
Of other years move thro' the mellow fields,  
I turn unto this meadow of the dead,  
Strewn with the leaves stormed from October trees,  
And wonder if my resting shall be dug  
Here by this cedar's moan or under the sway  
Of yonder cypress — lair of winds that rove  
As Valkyries sent from Valhalla's court  
In search of worthy slain.  
And sundry times with questioning I tease  
The entombed of their estate — seeking to know  
Whether 'tis sweeter in the grave to feel  
The oblivion of Nature's silent flow,  
Or here to wander wistful o'er her face.  
Whether the harvesting of pain and joy

Which men call Life ends so, or whether death  
Pours the warm chrism of Immortality  
Into each human heart whose glow is spent.

And oft the Silence hears me. For a voice  
Of sighing wind may answer, or a gaze,  
Though wordless, from a marble seraph's face.  
Or sometimes from unspeakable deeps of gold,  
That ebb along the west, revealings wing  
And tremble, like ethereal swift tongues  
Unskilled of human speech, about my heart —  
Till youth, age, death, even earth's all, it seems,  
Are but brave moments wakened in that Soul,  
To whom infinities are as a span,  
Eternities as bird-flights o'er the sun,  
And worlds as sands blown from Sahara's wilds  
Into the ceaseless surging of the sea. . . .

Then twilight hours lead back my wandered spirit  
From out the wilderness of mystery  
Whence none may find a path to the Unknown,  
And chastened to content I turn me home.

## WAKING

OH, THE long dawn, the weary, endless dawn,  
When sleep's oblivion is torn away  
From love that died with dying yesterday  
But still unburied in the heart lies on!

Oh, the sick gray, the twitter in the trees,  
The sense of human waking o'er the earth!  
The quivering memories of love's fair birth  
Now strown as deathless flowers o'er its decease!

Oh, the regret, and oh, regretlessness,  
Striving for sovranity within the soul!  
Oh, fear that life shall never more be whole,  
And immortality but make it less!

## STORM-EBB

DUSKING amber dimly creeps  
Over the vale,  
Lit by the kildee's silver sweeps,  
Sad with his wail.

Eastward swing the silent clouds  
Into the night.  
Burdens of day they seem — in crowds  
Hurled from earth's sight.

Tilting gulls whip whitely far  
Over the lake,  
Tirelessly on o'er buoy and spar  
Till they o'ertake



Shadow and mingled mist — and then  
    Vanish to wing  
Still the bewildering night-fen,  
    Where the waves ring.

Dusking amber dimly dies  
    Out of the vale.  
Dead from the dunes the winds arise —  
    Ghosts of the gale.

## LINGERING

I LINGERED still when you were gone,  
When tryst and trust were o'er,  
While memory like a wounded swan  
In sorrow sung love's lore.

I lingered till the whippoorwill  
Had cried delicious pain  
Over the wild-wood — in its thrill  
I heard your voice again.

I lingered and the mellow breeze  
Blew to me sweetly dewed —  
Its touch awoke the sorceries  
Your last caresses brewed.

But when the night with silent start  
    Had sown her starry seed,  
The harvest which sprang in my heart  
    Was loneliness and need.

## FAUN-CALL

OH, WHO is he will follow me  
With a singing,  
Down sunny roads where windy odes  
Of the woods are ringing?

Where leaves are tossed from branches lost  
In a tangle  
Of vines that vie to clamber high —  
But to vault and dangle!

Oh, who is he? — His eye must be  
As a lover's  
To leap and woo the chicory's hue  
In the hazel-hovers!

His hope must dance like radiance  
That hurries  
To scatter shades from the silent glades  
Where the quick hare scurries.

And he must see that Autumn's glee  
And her laughter  
From his lips and heart will quell all smart —  
Of before and after!

## THE LIGHTHOUSEMAN

WHEN at evening smothered lightnings  
Burn the clouds with fretted fires;  
When the stars forget to glisten,  
And the winds refuse to listen  
To the song of my desires,  
    Oh, my love, unto thee!

When the livid breakers angered  
Churn against my stormy tower;  
When the petrel flying faster  
Brings an omen to the master  
Of his vessel's fated hour —  
    Oh, the reefs! ah, the sea!

Then I climb the climbing stairway,  
Turn the light across the storm;

You are watching, fisher-maiden,  
For the token-flashes laden  
With a love death could not harm —  
    Lo, they come, swift and free!

*One* — that means, "I think of thee!"

*Two* — "I swear me thine!"

*Three* — Ah, hear me tho' you sleep!—

    Is, that I know thee mine!

Thro' the darkness, One, Two, Three,

    All the night they sweep:

Thro' raging darkness o'er the deep,

    One — and Two — and Three

## SERENITY

AND could I love it more — this simple scene  
Of cot-strewn hills and fields long-harvested,  
That lie as if forgotten were all green,  
    So bare, so dead!

Or could my gaze more tenderly entwine  
Each pallid beech and silvery sycamore  
Outreaching arms in patience to divine  
    If winter's o'er?

Ah no, the wind has blown into my veins  
The blue infinity of sky, the sense  
Of meadows free to-day from icy pains —  
    From wintry vents.



And sunny peace more virgin than the glow  
Falling from eve's first star into the night,  
Brings hope believing what it ne'er can know  
    With mortal sight.

## WANTON JUNE

I KNEW she would come!  
Sarcastic November  
Laughed cold and glum  
On the last red ember  
Of forest leaves.  
He was laughing, the scorner,  
At me forlorn  
Than any that grieves —  
Because I asked him if June would come!

But I knew she would come  
When snow-hearted winter  
Gripped river and loam,  
And the wind sped flinter  
On icy heel,

I was chafing my sorrow  
And yearning to borrow  
A hope that would steal  
Across the hours — till June should come.

And now she is here —  
The wanton! — I follow  
Her steps, ever near,  
To the shade of the hollow  
Where violets blow:  
And chide her for leaving,  
Tho' half believing  
She taunted me so,  
To make her abided return more dear.

## SPIRIT OF RAIN

*(Miyanoshita, Japan, 1905)*

SPIRIT of rain —

With all thy mountain mists that wander lonely  
As a gray train  
Of souls newly discarnate seeking new life only!

Spirit of rain!

Leading them thro' dim torii, up fane-ways onward  
Till not in vain  
They tremble upon the peaks and plunge rejoicing  
dawnward.

Spirit of rain!

So would I lead my dead thoughts high and higher,  
Till they regain  
Birth and the beauty of a new life's fire.

## TEARLESS

Do WOMEN weep when men have died?

It cannot be!

For I have sat here by his side,  
Breathing dear names against his face,  
That he must list to, were his place

Over God's throne —

Yet have I wept no tear and made no moan.

Do women weep — not gaze stone-eyed?

Grief seems in vain.

Do women weep? — I was his bride —  
They brought him to me cold and pale —  
Upon his lids I saw the trail

Of deathly pain.

They said, "Her tears will fall like autumn rain."

I cannot weep! Not if hot tears,  
Dropped on his lids,  
Might burn him back to blessèd years  
Of yearning love, would any rise  
To flood the anguish from my eyes —  
And I'm his bride!  
Ah me, do women weep when men have died?

## SUNSET-LOVERS

UPON how many a hill,  
Across how many a field,  
Beside how many a river's restful flowing,  
They stand, with eyes a-thrill,  
And hearts of day-rue healed,  
Gazing, O wistful sun, upon thy going!

They have forgotten life,  
Forgotten sunless death;  
Desire is gone — is it not gone for ever?  
No memory of strife  
Have they, or pain-sick breath.  
No hopes to fear or fears hope cannot sever.

Silent the gold steals down  
The west, and mystery

Moves deeper in their hearts and settles darker.  
'Tis faded — the day's crown;  
But strange and shadowy  
They see the Unseen as night falls stark and starker.

Like priests whose altar fires  
Are spent, immovable  
They stand, in awful ecstasy uplifted.  
Zephyrs awake tree-lyres,  
The starry deeps are full,  
Earth with a mystic majesty is gifted.

Ah, sunset-lovers, though  
Time were but pulsing pain,  
And death no more than its eternal ceasing,  
Would you not choose the throe,  
Hold the oblivion vain,  
To have beheld so many a day's releasing?



## THE EMPTY CROSS

THE eve of Golgotha had come,  
And Christ lay shrouded in the garden Tomb:  
Among the olives, Oh, how dumb,  
How sad the sun incarnadined the gloom!

The hill grew dim — the pleading cross  
Reached empty arms toward the closing gate.  
Jerusalem, oh, count thy loss!  
Oh, hear ye! hear ye! ere it be too late!

Reached bleeding arms — but how in vain!  
The murmurous multitude within the wall  
Already had forgot His pain —  
To-morrow would forget the cross — and all!

They knew not Rome, before its sign,  
Bending her brow bound with the nations' threne,  
Would sweep all lands from Nile to Rhine  
In servitude unto the Nazarene.

Nor knew that millions would forsake  
Ancestral shrines great with the glow of time,  
And lifting up its token shake  
Aeons with thrill of love or battle's crime.

With empty arms aloft it stood:  
Ah, Scribe and Pharisee, ye builded well!  
The cross emblotted with His blood  
Mounts, highest Hope of men, against earth's hell!

## SONG

HER voice is vibrant beauty dipt  
In dreams of infinite sorrow and delight.  
Thro' an awaiting soul 'tis slipt  
And lo, words spring that breathe immortal might.

## TO HER WHO SHALL COME

### I

OUT of the night I cry to thee, I call,  
As, in a loveless chamber where no ray  
Of unbelievable light and freedom fall,  
Might cry one manacled! And tho' the ways  
Thou comest is unseen; tho' my heart's sore  
With emptiness when morning's silent grays  
Wake me to long aloneness; yet I know  
Thou drawest nearer to me and wilt go  
Beside me, when I have found thee, evermore!

### 2

So, in the garden of my heart each day  
I plant thee a flower. Now the pansy, peace,  
And now the lily, faith — or now a spray  
Of the climbing ivy, hope. And they ne'er cease

Around the still unblossoming rose of love  
To bend in fragrant tribute to her sway.  
Then — for thy shelter from life's sultrier suns,  
The oak of strength I set o'er joy that runs  
With brooklet glee from winds that grieve above.

## 3

But where now art thou? Watching with love's eye  
The eve-star wander? Listening through dim trees  
Some thrilled muezzin of the forest cry  
From his leafy minaret? Or by the sea's  
Blue brim, while the spectral moon half o'er it hangs  
Like the faery isle of Avalon, do these  
My yearnings speak of days as yet untrod?  
Sweet, sweet, O! as the ecstasy of God,  
My own, must be our meeting's mystic pangs.

## 4

And will be soon! For last night near to-day,  
Dreaming, God called me thro' the space-built  
sphere

Of heaven and said, "Come, waiting one, and lay  
Thine ear unto my Heart — there thou shalt hear  
The secrets of this world where evils war."  
Such things I heard as must rend mortal clay  
To tell, and trembled — till God, pitying,  
Said, "Listen" . . . Oh, my love, I heard thee  
sing  
Out of thy window to the morning star!

## STORM-TWILIGHT

Tossing, swirling, swept by the wind,  
    Beaten abaft by the rain,  
The swallows high in the sodden sky  
    Circle oft and again.

They rise and sink and drift and swing,  
    Twitterless in the chill;  
A-haste, for stark is the coming dark  
    Over the wet of the hill.

Wildly, swiftly, at last they stream  
    Into their chimney home.  
A livid gash in the west, a crash—  
    Then silence, sadness, gloam.

## WAR

A HOST of struggling centuries lie prone  
Upon the fields of time, but still the wake  
Of progress loud is haunted with a groan  
That seems all aspiration's soul to shake.  
We bid the courier lightning leap along  
Its instant path with spirit speed, command  
Stars lost in night-eternity to throng  
Before the eye of science; yea, we stand  
On glory's peak and triumphingly cry  
Our mastery of earth and sea and air.  
But unto War's necessity we bare  
Our piteous breasts and impotently die.



## WILDNESS

To drift with the drifting clouds,  
And blow with the blow of breezes,  
To ripple with waves and murmur with caves  
To soar, as the sea-mew pleases!

To dip with the dipping sails,  
And burn with the burning heaven —  
My life! my soul! for the infinite roll  
Of a day to wildness given!

## BEFORE AUTUMN

SUMMER'S last moon has waned —

Waned

As amber fires

Of an Aztec shrine.

The invisible breath of coming death has stained

The withering leaves with its nepenthean wine —

Autumn's near.

Winds in the woodland moan —

Moan

As memories

Of a Nevermore.

Magnolia seeds like Indian beads are strown

From crimson pods along the earth's sere floor —

Autumn's near.

Solitude slowly steals,

Steals

Her silent way

By the songless brook.

At the gnarly yoke of a solemn oak she kneels,

The musing joy of sadness in her look —

Autumn's near.

Yes, with her golden days —

Days

When hope and toil

Are as winds at rest —

Autumn is near, and the tired year 'mid praise

Lies down with leaf and blossom on his breast —

Autumn's near.

## FULFILMENT

A-BASK in the mellow beauty of the ripening sun,  
Sad with the lingering sense of summer's purpose  
done,  
The shorn and searing fields stretch from me one by  
one

Along the creek.

The corn-stalks drop their shadows down the fallow  
hill;  
Wearing autumnal warmth the farm sleeps by the mill,  
Around each heavy eave low smoke hangs blue and  
still —

Life's flow is weak.

Along the weedy roads and lanes I walk — or pause —  
Ponder a fallen nut or quirking crow whose caws  
Seem with prehuman hintings fraught or ancient awes  
Of forest deeps.

Of forest deeps the pale-face hunter never trod,  
Nor Indian, with the silent stealth of Nature shod;  
Deeps tense with the timelessness and solitude of God,  
Who never sleeps.

And many times has Autumn, on her harvest way,  
Gathered again into the earth leaf, fruit, and spray;  
Here many times dwelt rueful as she dwells to-day  
The while she reaps.

## LAST SIGHT OF LAND

THE clouds in woe hang far and dim:  
I look again, and lo,  
Only a faint and shadow line  
Of shore — I watch it go.

The gulls have left the ship and wheel  
Back to the cliff's gray wraith.  
Will it be so of all our thoughts  
When we set sail on Death?

And what will the last sight be of life  
As lone we fare and fast?  
Grief and the face we love in mist —  
Then night and awe too vast?

Or the dear light of Hope — like that,  
    Oh, see, from the lost shore  
Kindling and calling “Onward, you  
    Shall reach the Evermore!”

## SILENCE

SILENCE is song unheard,  
Is beauty never born,  
Is light forgotten — left unstirred  
Upon Creation's morn.



DAVID

FIRST PUBLISHED 1904

AFFECTIONATELY  
TO MY BROTHER  
L. LACY RICE

This page in the original text is blank.

# ACT I

## CHARACTERS

SAUL . . . . .		<i>King of Israel</i>
JONATHAN . . . . .		<i>Heir to the Throne</i>
ISHUI . . . . .		<i>His Brother</i>
SAMUEL . . . . .		<i>The Prophet of Israel</i>
ABNER . . . . .		<i>Captain of the Host of Israel</i>
DOEG . . . . .		<i>An Edomite, Chief Servant of Saul and Suitor for Michal</i>
ADRIEL . . . . .		<i>A Lord of Meholah, Suitor for Merab</i>
DAVID . . . . .		<i>A Shepherd, secretly anointed King</i>
ABISHAI . . . . .		<i>A Follower of David</i>
ABIATHAR . . . . .		<i>A Priest and Follower of David</i>
A PHILISTINE SPY . .		
AHINOAM . . . . .		<i>The Queen</i>
MERAB . . . . .	}	<i>Daughters of Saul and Ahinoam</i>
MICHAL . . . . .		
MIRIAM . . . . .		<i>A Blind Prophetess, and later the "Witch of Endor"</i>
JUDITH . . . . .	}	<i>Timbrel-players of the King</i>
LEAH . . . . .		
ZILLA . . . . .		
ADAH . . . . .		<i>Handmaiden to Merab</i>

*A Chorus of Women, a Band of Prophets, Followers of David,  
Soldiers of Saul, People of the Court, etc.*

## ACT I

SCENE: *A Hall of Judgment in the palace of SAUL at Gibeah. The walls and pillars of cedar are richly carven—with serpents, pomegranates, and cherubim in gold. The floors are of bright marble; the throne of ivory hung with a lion's skin whose head is its footstool. On the right, by the throne, and on the left are doors to other portions of the palace; they are draped with woven curtains of purple and white. In the rear, which is open and supported on pillars, a porch crosses a court. Through the porch, on the environing hills, glow the campfires of the Philistines, the enemies of Israel. Lamps in the Hall burn low, and on the floor JUDITH, LEAH and ZILLA are reclining restively.*

*Judith (springing to her feet impatiently).* O  
for a feast, pomegranate wine and song!

*Leah.* Oh! Oh!

*Zilla.* A feast indeed! the men in camp!  
When was a laugh or any leaping here?  
Never; and none to charm with timbreling!

*[She goes to the porch.*

*Leah.* What shall we do?

*Judith.* I'll dance.

*Zilla.* Until you're dead.

*Judith.* Or till a youth wed Zilla for her beauty?  
I'll not soil mine with sullen fear all day  
Because these Philistines press round. As well  
Be wenches gathering grapes or wool! Come,  
*Leah.*

*[She prepares to dance.*

*Leah.* No, Judith, I'll put henna on my nails,

*[Sits down.*

And mend my anklet.

*Zilla (at the curtains).* Oh! Oh! Oh!



*Judith (starts).* Now, hear her!  
Who, who, now, is it? dog or fox or devil?

*Zilla.* All!

*Judith.* Then 'tis Ishui! (*Bounding to curtains.*) Yes. Ishui!

And fury in him, sallow, souring fury!  
A jackal were his mate! Come, come, we'll plague  
him.

*Zilla.* Shall we—with David whom he hates?

*Judith.* Aie, David!

The joy of rousing men to jealousy!

*Leah.* Why hates he David, Zilla?

*Zilla.* Stupid Leah!

*Judith.* Hush, hush, be meet and ready now;  
he's near.

Look as for silly visions and for dreams!

[*They pose. ISHUI enters. JUDITH sighs.*]

*Ishui.* Now, timbrel-gaud, why gape you here?

*Judith.* O! 'tis

Prince Ishui!

*Zilla.* Prince Ishui! Then he  
Will tell us! he will tell us!

*Leah.* Yes!

*Judith.* Of David!  
O, is he come? when, where?—quick, quick?—and  
will

He pluck us ecstasies out of his harp?  
O will he, till we're wanton for him, mad,  
And sigh and laugh and weep to the moon?

*Ishui.* Low thing!  
Chaff of the king!

*Judith.* The king! I had not thought!  
David a king! how beauteous would he be!

*Ishui.* David?

*Judith.* Turban of sapphire! robe of gold!

*Ishui.* A king? o'er Israel?

*Judith.* Who, who can tell?  
Have you not heard? Yesterday in the camp,  
Among war-old but fearful men, he offered  
Kingly to meet Goliath—great Goliath!

*Ishui.* What do you say? to meet Goliath?

*Judith (laughing in his face).*

Aie!

*[He thrusts her from him.*

*[She goes, dancing, with ZILLA and LEAH.*

*Adriel (who has entered).* Ishui, in a rage?

*Ishui.* Should I not be?

*Adriel.* Not would you be yourself.

*Ishui.* By . . . Israel's God!

*[Then cooling cunningly.*

But you say well, I should not, Adriel:

So pardon—and—unto our business.

*Adriel.* What was the offence?

*Ishui.* Turn from it: I have not  
Bidden you here for vapors . . . tho' they had  
Substance as well for you!

*Adriel.* For me?

*Ishui.* Who likes  
Laughter against him?

*Adriel.* I was laughed at?

*Ishui.* Why,  
It is this shepherd!

*Adriel.* David?

*Ishui.* With his harp!  
Flinging enchantment on the palace air  
Till he impassions to him all who breathe.

*Adriel.* What sting from that? He's lovable  
and brave.

*Ishui.* Lovable? *lovable?*

*Adriel.* I do not see.

*Ishui.* This, then: you've hither come with gifts  
and gold,  
Dream-bringing amethyst and weft of Ind,  
To wed my sister, Merab?

*Adriel.* It is so.

*Ishui.* And you've the king's consent; but *she*  
denies?

*Adriel.* As every wind, you know it.

*Ishui.* Still denies!  
And you, lost in the maze of her, fare on  
Blindly and find no reason for it!



*Ishui.* Off to your sleep; be off—

[*Makes to strike her.*

*Adriel* (*holds him*).

Ishui, no.

[*ADAH goes.*

*Ishui* (*gnashingly*). Then see you now how  
“lovable” he is?

I tell you that he stands athwart us all!  
The heart of Merab is swung, as a censer, to him,  
My seat at table with the king usurped!  
Mildew and mocking to the harp of Doeg  
As it were any slave's; the while we all  
Are lepered with suspicion.

*Adriel.* Of the king?

*Ishui.* Ai! and of Jonathan and Michal.

*Adriel.* Hush.

[*Hears voices.*

[*Enter MICHAL, passing, with MIRIAM.*

*Adriel.* Michal, delay. Whom lead you?

*Michal.* Miriam,

A prophetess.

*Adriel.* How of the king to-night?

*Michal.* He's not at rest; dreads Samuel's  
prophecy

The throne shall pass from him, and darkens more  
Against this boundless Philistine Goliath  
Who dares at Israel daily on the hills,  
As we were dogs!

*Adriel.* Is David with him?

*Michal.* No;

But he is sent for—and will ease him—Ah!  
He's wonderful to heal the king with his harp'  
A waft, a sunny leap of melody,  
And swift the hovering mad shadow's gone.

*Adriel.* I thank you.

*Ishuī.* And (*writhes*) I curse!

*Michal.* What anger's this?

*Ishui.* Disdaining Doeg and his plea to dust,  
His waiting and the winning o'er of Edom,  
You are enamored of this David too?

*Michal.* I think my brother Ishui hath a fever.

[*She goes, calmly, with MIRIAM.*

*Ishui.* Now you are kindled—are you quivering,  
Or must this shepherd put upon us more?

*Adriel.* But has he not dealt honorably?

*Ishui.* No.

*Adriel.* Why do you urge it?

*Ishui.* Why have senses? Does he  
With Samuel the prophet not enshroud  
Some secret, and has Samuel not told  
The kingdom from my father shall be rent  
And fall unto one another?

*Adriel.* You are certain?

*[SAUL'S voice within.*

*Ishui.* Is not the proof pouring into my ears?  
Can you not hear?

*Adriel.* The king?

*Ishui.* And Samuel  
With prophecy or some refusal tears him!

*[They step aside. SAUL, followed by  
SAMUEL, strides in and mounts the  
throne.*



*Saul.* You threat, and ever thunder threaten-  
ing!

Pour seething prophecy into my veins,  
Till a simoon of madness in me moves.  
Am I not king, the king? chosen and sealed?  
Who've been anathema and have been bane  
Unto the foes of Israel, and filled  
The earth with death of them?  
And do you still forbid that I bear gold  
And bribe away this Philistine array  
Folded about us, fettering with flame?

*Samuel.* Yes,—yes! While there is air—and  
awe of Heaven

Do I forbid! A champion must rise  
To level this Goliath. Thus may we  
Loose on them pest of panic and of fear.

*Saul.* Are forty days not dead? A champion!  
None will arise—'tis vain. And I'll not wait  
On miracle.

*Samuel.* Offer thy daughter, then,  
Michal, thy fairest, to whoever shall.



*Saul.* Thus he sways me.

*Ishui.* Subtle!—subtle!

And yet I must not speak; come, Adriel,

[*As if going.*

No use of us is here.

*Saul.* Use? subtle? Stand!

*Ishui.* No, father, no.

*Saul.* What mean you?

*Ishui.* Do not ask. . . .

Yet how it creeps, and how!

*Saul.* Unveil your words.

[*Comes down.*

*Ishui.* Do you not see it crawl, this serpent  
scheme?

Goliath slain—the people mad with praise,

Then fallen from you—Michal the victor's  
wife. . . .

*Saul.* Say on, say on.

*Ishui.* Or else the champion slain—

Fear on the people—panic—the kingdom's ruin?

*Saul.* Now do the folds slip from me.

*Ishui.* And you see?  
How, then, if one arise?—If one arise?

*Saul.* Death, death! If he hath touched this  
prophet—if  
Merely a little moment!—

*Ishui.* If?—I've seen  
Your David with him.

*Saul.* Death! if—— (*uncertain*) Come here:  
David?

*Ishui.* In secret.

*Saul.* Say you?

*Ishui.* Yes.

*Saul.* The folds slip further;  
To this you lead me—hatred against David!  
To this with supple envy's easy glide!

*Ishui.* I have but told——

*Saul.* You have but builded lies,  
As ever you are building and forever.  
I'll hear no more against him—(*calls*) Abner!  
(*a pause*)—no.

(*To ABNER, who enters.*) David, and with his harp.

*Abner.* My lord——

*Saul.* Not come?

He is not come? Forever he delays!

*[Remounts throne.*

*Abner.* Time's yet to pass.

*Saul.* There is not. Am I king?

He should be swift as eagles. Bring me wine.

*[Then as a harp sounds.*

But no, 'tis he! . . . 'Tis David! . . . And he  
sings! *[Rises.*

*David (bravely, within).*

Smiter of Hosts,

Terrible Saul!

Vile on the hills laughs he who boasts

None is among

Great Israel's all

Fearless for Saul, King Saul!

*[Entering with people of the palace.*

Aye, is there none

Galled of the sting,

Will at the soul of Goliath run?

Wring it and up  
 To his false gods fling? . . .  
 None for the king, the king?

*[He drops to his knee, amid praise, before  
 the throne.]*

*Saul (darkening).* Forego this praise and stand  
 Away from him; 'tis overmuch.

*(To DAVID.)* Why have  
 You dallied and delayed?

*David.* My lord, delayed?

*Saul.* Do not smile wonder, mocking!

*David.* Why, my lord,  
 I do not mock. Only the birds have wings.  
 Yet on the vales behind me I have left  
 Haste and a swirl, a wonderment of air,  
 And in the torrent's troubled vein amaze,  
 So swift I hurried hither at your urgency  
 Out of the fields and folding the far sheep!

*Saul.* You have not; you have dallied.

*[Motions rest out.]*

You have dallied.

*[Comes down indeterminately.]*

And now——

*David.* And now the king with darkness foams,  
With sheeted passions like to lightning gusts.

*[All have gone.]*

Shall I not play to him?

*Saul.*

You shall not, no.

*[Slowly draws a dagger.]*

I'll not be lulled.

*David.* But show a tiger gleam?

Terrible fury stealing from the heart

And crouching cold within the eye, O Saul?

*Saul.* I'll not endure. They say that you——

*David.*

They say?

What is this raving in you? Does the truth

So limpid overflow in palaces?

Never an enemy to venom it?

Am I not David, faithful, and thy friend?

*Saul.* I'll slay you and regretless.

*David (unmoving).*

Slay, my lord?

*Saul.* Do you not fear? And brave me to my breast?

*David.* Have I done wrong that I should fear the king?

Reed as I am, could he not breathe and break me?

And I should be oblivion at a word!

But under the terror of his might have I

Not seen his heart beat justice and beat love?

See, even now! . . .

*Saul (torn).* I will not listen to them!

*David.* To whom, my lord, and what?

*Saul.* Ever they say,  
 "This David," and "This David!" It is lies. . . .  
 [*Goes to throne.*]

But think you, David, I shall lose the kingdom?

*David (starting).* My lord! . . .

*Saul.* Pain in your eyes? you think it? Deem I cannot overleap this destiny?

*David.* To that let us not verge; it has but ill.  
 Deeper the future gulf is for our fears.  
 Forget it. Forget the brink may ever gape,



And wield the throne so well that God Himself  
*Must* not unking you, more than He would cry  
The morning star from Heaven! Then, I swear it,  
None else will!

*Saul.* Swear?

*David.* Nay, nay!

*Saul.* You swear?

*David.* But words,  
Foolishly from the heart; a shepherd speech!  
Give them no mood; but see, see yonder fires  
Camping upon the peace of Israel,  
As we were carrion beneath the sun!  
Let us conceive annihilation on them,  
Hurricane and a deluging and ruin.

*Saul.* Ah, but the prophecy! the prophecy!  
It eats in me the food of rest and ease.  
And David, nearer: Samuel in my stead  
Another hath anointed.

*David.* Saul, not this!  
This should not fall to me, my lord; to me!  
You cannot understand; it pains beyond

All duty and enduring!

*Saul.* Pains beyond . . . ?

Who is he? know you of him? do you? know  
you?

You sup the confidence of Samuel?

Who bids me give my daughter, bids me give——

I'll search from Nile to Nineveh——

*David.* My lord!

*Saul.* Mountain and desert, wilderness and sea,  
Under and over, search—and find. (*Rising.*) And  
when——

*Enter MICHAL joyously.*

*Michal.* O father, father! David! Listen!

. . . Why

All here is dark and quivering as pain,

And a foreboding binds me ere I breathe!

David, you have not been as sun to him!

*David.* But Michal will be now.

*Saul.* Child, well, what then?

*Michal.* Father, a secret! Oh, and it will make

Dawn and delight in you!

*Saul.* Perhaps; then, well?

*Michal.* Oh, I have heard . . . !

[*Stops.*

*Saul.* Have heard!—Why do you pale?

[*She stands unaccountably moved.*

Now are you Baal-bit?

*David.* Michal!

*Michal (in terror).* David! . . . David!

What does it mean? I cannot speak! It shrinks  
Shivering down upon my heart in awe!

*David.* And numbs you so?—

*Saul.* Let it rush from your lips!

Am I to gape here, muffled in a mist  
Of silly megrims! Speak, what is it?

*Michal.* Ah!

I know not; danger rising and its wing  
Sudden against my lips!

*David.* To warn?

*Michal.* It shall not!

There—now again flows joy: I think it flows.

*Saul.* Then—you have heard . . . ?

*Michal.* Yes, father, yes! Have you  
Not much desired discovery of whom  
Samuel hath anointed?

*Saul.* Well?

*Michal.* I've found——

[DAVID *blenches.*

Almost have found! A prophetess to-day  
Hath told me that he is a——

[*Realizes.*

*Saul.* Now you cease?

[*She stands horrified.*

Sudden and senseless!

*Michal.* David!—No!

*Saul.* God! God!

Have I not bidden swiftly! Ever then  
Vexation? I could—Ah. Will she not speak!

*Michal.* I cannot.

*Saul.* Cannot! Are you flesh of me?

*David.* My lord, not anger!

*Saul.* Cannot! (*up*) Has she breath?

*David.* Yea, yea, O king—and I! Yet——

*(with pleading passion)* It is thus!

Her lips could never seal upon a wrong.

Sudden divinity is on them, silence

Sent for the benison of Israel,

Else were it shattered by her love to you!

Believe, in all the riven realm of duty

There's no obedience from thee she would hold.

If it seem other——

*Enter ABNER, hurriedly.*

*Abner.* Pardon, O king. A word.

*Saul.* I will not. Do you come with vexing too?

*Abner.* The Philistines—some fury is afoot;  
A spy's within our gates—and scorns to speak.

*Saul.* Conspiracy of silence! . . . Back to him.

[ABNER goes.

*(To DAVID and MICHAL.)* But you—I'll not forget.  
I'll not forget.

*[Goes trembling, his look bent backward  
still upon them.]*

*David* (*casting off suspense*). Forget! anoint-  
ing! peril! What are they all?

Michal!—for me you have done this, for me?

[*She stands immovable.*]

O has a princess in whose veins there flow  
Sympathy and all love unto a father,—  
Has she so shielded me?

*Michal.* You are the anointed?

*David.* I am—oh, do not flint your loveliness!—  
I am the anointed, but all innocent  
In will or hope of any envious wrong,  
As lily blowing of blasphemy! as dew  
Upon it is of enmity!

*Michal.* Anointed!

You whom the king uplifted from the fields!

*David.* And who am ever faithful to him!

*Michal.* You, You,

Whom Jonathan loves more than women love!

*David.* Yet reaches not my love to Jonathan!

*Michal.* You—you!

*David.* But, hear me!

*Michal.* You, of all!

*David.* O hear!

Of my anointing Jonathan is 'ware,  
 Knows it is holy, helpless, innocent  
 As dawn or a drift of dreaming in the night!  
 Knows it unsought—out of the skies—supernal—  
 From the inspirèd cruse of Samuel!  
 For Israel it dripped upon me—yea!  
 For Israel must drip until I die!  
 Or till high Gath and Askalon are blown  
 Dust on the wind, and all Philistia  
 Lie peopleless and still under the stars! . . .  
 Goliath, then, a laughter evermore! . . .  
 Still, still you shrink? do you not see, not feel?

*Michal.* So have you breathed yourself about  
 my heart,  
 Even as moonlit incense, spirit flame  
 Burning away all barrier!

*David.* But see!

*Michal.* And all the world has streamed a rap-  
 ture in,

Till even now my lids from anger falter  
And the dew falls!

*David.*                Restrain! O do not weep!  
Upon my heart each tear were as a sea  
Flooding it from all duty but the course  
Of thy delight!

*Michal.*             Poor, that I should have tears!  
Fury were better, tempest! O weak eyes,  
When 'tis my father, and with Samuel  
You creep to steal his kingdom!

*David.*                                        Michal! . . . Michal!

*Michal.* Yes, steal it!

*David.*                                        Cruel! fell accusal! Yea,  
Utterly false it is and full of wounding!

[*A pause.*

And yet so be it—so—unto the end!

[*As if broken.*

Delirious wings of hope that fluttered up,  
At last to fall!

[*Moves to go.*

*Michal.*             David!



*David.* Farewell!

*Michal.* . . . You must not!

*David.* Peace to you, peace and joy!

*Michal.* You must not go!

*[He turns. She sways and reaches to him her arms. But as they move together DOEG and MERAB appear, then vanish amid dismay.]*

*Michal.* Merab and Doeg!

*David (has sprung to her).* Yet what matter,  
now!

Were it the driven night-unshrouded dead!

Under the firmament is but one need,

That you will understand!

*Michal.* But Merab! ah,

She's cunning, cold and cruel, and she loves thee;

Hath told her love to Ahinoam the queen!

And Doeg hates thee—since for me he's mad!

*David.* Then be his hate as wild, as wide as  
winds

That gather up the desert for their blast,  
 Be it as Sheol deep, stronger than stars  
 That fling fate on us, and I care not, care not,  
 If I am trusted and to Michal truth!—  
 Hear, hear me! for the kingdom, tho' 't may  
     come,

I yearn not; but for you!

*Michal.*                      No, no!

*David.*                      For you!

Since I a shepherd o'er a wild of hills  
 First beheld you the daughter of the king  
 Amid his servants, leaning, still with noon,  
 Beautiful under a tamarisk, until  
 All beauty else is dead——

*Michal.*                      Ah, cease!

*David.*                      Since then

I have been wonder, ravishment and dream!  
 The molded light and fragrant miracle,  
 Body of you and soul, lifted me till  
 When you departed—when you left me—

*Michal.*                      Ah!

*David.* I fell thro' infinity of void!

*Michal.* No more!

*David.* Then came the prophet Samuel with  
anointing!

My hope sprung as the sun!

*Michal.* I must not hear!

*David.* Then was I called to play before the  
king.

Here in this hall where cherubim shine out,  
Where the night silence——

*Michal.* David!

*David* Where it strung me,  
I waited, shepherd-timid, and you came,  
You for the king to try my skill! you, you!—  
And then divinely on thro' days we swept,  
Far from the birth unto the bourne of bliss,  
Until to-night you would not, tho' bereft,  
Reveal my helpless chrism, give me to peril!  
Say but the reason!

*Michal.* David!

*David.* Speak, O speak!

*Michal.* And shall I, shall I? how this proph-  
etess

Miriam hath foretold——

*David.* Some wonder? speak!

*Michal* (*springs up the throne, then down*).

No, no! horror in me moans out against it.

Wed me with destiny against my father?

Dethrone my mother? Ah!

*David.* Not that—no wrong!

*Michal.* Then swear conspiracy upon its tide

Never shall lift you!

*David.* Deeper than soul or sea,

Deep as divinity is deep, I swear.

If it shall come, the kingdom——

*Michal.* “If!” not “if.”

Surrender this anointing! Spurn it, say

You never will be king though Israel

Kingless go mad for it!

*David.* I cannot.

*Michal.* Ha!

*David.* I cannot—and I must not. It is holy!

*Michal.* Then must I hate you—scorn you—

*David.* Michal!

*Michal.* And will.

But to reign over Israel you care,  
Not for the peace of it!

*David.* And Michel cares,  
In saying so, only to rend and wrong me!

[*Loftily.*

And yet let her behold yon Philistines  
Whose fires lap up the night with bloody tongue;

[*A commotion is heard within.*

As God has swung the world and hung forever  
The infinite in awe, to-morrow night  
Not one of them shall burn!

*Michal.* And wherefore?

*David.* None!

*Michal.* What is this strength! It seizes on me!

No,

I'll not believe; no, no, more than I would  
From a boy's breath or the mere sling you wear

A multitude should flee! And you shall learn  
 A daughter to a father may be true  
 Tho' paleness be her doom until she die!

[*She turns to go. Enter JONATHAN  
 eagerly.*

*Jonathan.* David!

*David.* My friend—my Jonathan! 'Tis you?

[*They embrace. MICHAL goes.*

*Jonathan.* Great heart, I've heard how yester-  
 day before  
 The soldiers you . . . But Michal's gone? No  
 word?

*David.* The anointing.

*Jonathan.* Ah, she knows?

*David.* All.

*Jonathan.* And disdains  
 Believing? tell me.

*David.* No, not now—not now.  
 Let us forget it in a leap of deeds.

[*The commotion sounds again.*



Rather the last ray living in me, rather  
Death and the desecration of the worm.

Bid me not back with love, nor plea; I must!

*Jonathan.* But think——

*David.* No thought!

*Jonathan.* 'Twere futile——

*David.* Hear; the king!

*Jonathan.* The madness of it!

*David.* No, and see; they come.

*Jonathan.* Strangely my father is unstrung.

*David (unchangeably).* They come!

[*Enter SAUL with SAMUEL; Soldiers with  
the spy; AHINOAM with ABNER; and  
all the court in suppressed dread.*

*Saul (to SAMUEL).* He will not speak, but  
scorns me, and his lips  
Bitterly curve and grapple. But he shall  
Learn there is torture to it! Set him forth.

[*The SPY is thrust forward.*



Tighten his bonds up till he moan.

*[It is done.*

*Aye, gasp,*

Accursed Philistine! Now wilt thou tell  
The plan and passion of thy people 'gainst us?

*Spy.* Baal!

*Saul.* Tighten the torture more. . . . Now will  
you?

*Spy (in agony).* Yea!

*Saul.* On, then, reveal.

*Spy.* New forces have arrived,  
Numberless; more than peaks of Arabah.

*[General movement of uneasiness.*

Unless before to-morrow's noon one goes  
To overthrow Goliath . . . Gods! the pain!

*Saul.* Well? Well?

*Spy.* Then Gibeah attacked, and all,  
Even to sucking babes, they'll put to sword!

*[A movement of horror.*

*Ahinoam.* All Gibeah!

*A Woman.* My little ones? No, no!

[*She rushes frantically out.*]

*Samuel.* Then, Saul of Gibeah, one thing and  
one

Alone is to be done. A champion,  
To break this beetling giant down to death!

*Saul.* There is none.

*Samuel.* Is none! Call! I order it.

*Saul.* Then who will dare against him!

[*A silence.*]

See you now.

[*DAVID quivers.*]

*Samuel.* You, Abner, will not?

*Abner.* It were death and vain.

*Samuel.* Doeg, chief servant of the king?

*Doeg.* Why me?

Had I a mother out of Israel?

I am an alien, an Edomite.

*Saul (angrily).* And so there is none. Therefore

We—— [Rises.]

*David (suddenly).*

My lord!

[SAUL turns as he pushes forward.]

There is! for this is not endurable.  
 Futile and death? Alien? Edomite?  
 Has not this Philistine before the gates,  
 With insult and illimitable breath,  
 Vaunting of vanity and smiting laughter,  
 Boasted and braved and threatened up to Baal?  
 And now unless one slay him, Israel  
 From babe to age must bleed and be no more?  
 I am a shepherd, have but seized the lion  
 And throttled the bleating kid out of his throat;  
 Little it then beseems that I thrust in  
 Where battle captains pale and falter off;  
 But this is past all carp of rank or station.  
 One must go out—Goliath must have end.

*Doeg.* Ah, ah! and you will!

*Ishui.*

*You?*

*Jonathan.*

No, David!

*Saul.*

*You?*

*David.* Sudden you hound about me ravenous?

Have I thrown doom not daring to your feet,  
 Ruler of Israel, that you rise wild,  
 Livid above me as an avalanche?

*Doeg.* A plot! it is a plot! He will be slain—  
 From you, my lord, dominion then will fall!  
 Or should it not . . .

*Samuel.* Liar! it is no plot.  
 But courage sprung seraphic out of night,  
 Beautiful, yea, a bravery from God!

*Michal (behind the throng).* Open! and let me  
 enter! Open! Open!

[*She enters.*

[*Then not knowing what has passed.*

Father!

It is not false? but now the uttermost  
 Is that if this Goliath still exult,  
 There's peril of desolation, bloody ruin?

*Samuel.* I answer for him; yea.

*Michal.* Then to your will,  
 Father, unto will of yesterday  
 I bend me now with sacrificial joy.

Unto Goliath's slayer is the hand  
Of Michal, the king's daughter!

*David* (*joyously*). Michal! Michal!

*Doeg*. See you, my lord? Do you not understand?

*Ishui*. It is another coiling of their plot!

*Michal*. Coiling of plot? What mean you?

*Merab*. Ah! You know

Not it is David offers against Goliath?

*Michal*. David? (*Shrinking.*) David?

[*A low tumult is heard without. Enter a*

CAPTAIN *hurriedly.*

*Captain*. O King, bid me to speak!

*Saul*. Then speak!

*Captain*. Fear is upon the host. There will  
Be mutiny unless, Goliath slain,  
Courage spring up anew.

*David*. My lord, then, choose!  
Ere longer waiting fester to disaster.

*Samuel*. Yea, king of Gibeah, and bid him go,  
And Michal for his meed! or evermore

Evil be on you and the sear of shame—  
And haunting memory beyond the tomb!

*Saul.* Then let him—let him. And upon the  
field

Of Ephes-Dammin. But I am not blind!

(*To ABNER.*) Let him, to-morrow! Go prepare  
the host.

Yet—I am king, remember! I am king!

[*SAUL goes; murmurs of relief . . . All  
follow, but MICHAL, past DAVID with  
joy or hate.*

*David.* Michal!

[*She struggles against tears, but, turning,  
goes. He stands and gazes after her.  
Then a trumpet sounds and soldiers  
throng to the porch.*

*David* (*thrilled, his hand on his sling*). For  
Israel! For Israel!

[*Goes toward them.*

CURTAIN

## ACT II

This page in the original text is blank.



## ACT II

*SCENE: The royal tent of SAUL pitched on one hill of the battlefield of Ephes-Dammin. The tent is of black embroidered with various warlike designs. To one side on a dais are the chairs of SAUL and AHINOAM; also DAVID'S harp. On the other side, toward the front, is a table with weapons. The tent wall is lifted along the back, revealing on the opposite hill, across a deep narrow valley, the routed camp of the Philistines; before it in gleaming brazen armor lies Goliath slain. Other hills beyond, and the sky above. By the small table, her back to the battlefield, sits MERAB in cold anger. AHINOAM and several women look out in ecstasy toward DAVID, SAUL, JONATHAN, and the army, returning victorious, and shouting.*

*First Woman.* See, see, they come! they near!  
they come!

*Second Woman.* They come!

An avalanche! over the shining brook,  
Over the brook, and bright amid hosannas!

*Third Woman.* And now amid the rushes!

*First Woman.* And the servants!

Goliath's head high-borne upon a charger!  
The rocks that cry reverberant and vast!  
The people and the palms!

*Third Woman.* Yea, all the branches

Torn from the trees! The waving of them—O!

*Second Woman.* And David, see! triumphant,  
calm, between

The king and Jonathan! . . . His glory  
All the wild generations of the wind  
Ever shall utter! Hear them—

[*The tumult ascends afar.*

“David! David!”

O queen! a sea of shouting!

*Ahinoam.* Which you crave?

Then go and lave you in this tide of joy.

[*The women go rapturously. AHINOAM  
turns.*

*Merab.* Mother!

*Ahinoam.* My daughter?

*Merab.* Speak.

*Ahinoam.* They all are gone.

*Merab.* And Michal, where?

*Ahinoam.* I do not know, my child.

*Merab.* Why did my father pledge her to him?  
you

Not hindering?

*Ahinoam.* She is your sister. You  
Are pledged to Adriel.

*Merab.* And as a slave!  
And if I do not love him there is—riches!  
If he is Sodom-bitter to me—riches!

*Ahinoam.* But for the kingdom.

*Merab.* For my torture! What  
Kingdom is to a woman as her love?

*Ahinoam.* Then David still enthralls you?

*Merab.* Though he never  
Sought me with any murmur or desire!

Though he is Michal's for Goliath's death!  
Michal's to-day, unless——

*Ahinoam.* Merab, a care!  
Too near in you were ever love and hate.

[*The tumult nears. AHINOAM goes to look out. DOEG enters to MERAB.*]

*Doeg (low).* News, Merab!

*Merab.* Well?

*Doeg.* A triumph for us, yet!

The king is worn, as a leper pent, between  
Wonder of David and quick jealousy  
Because of praise this whelming of Goliath  
Wakes in the people.

*Merab.* Then? the triumph?

*Doeg.* This.

[*The tumult, nearer.*]

I've skillfully disposed the women  
To coldly sing of Saul, but of our David—

[*Watches her.*]

With lavish of ecstasy as to a king.

*Merab* (*springing up*). Then *I* will praise him!

*Doeg*. David? you?

*Merab*. As he

Was never—and shall never be again.

[*Takes a dagger.*]

*Doeg*. But—

*Merab*. Give me the vial.

*Doeg*. The poison?

*Merab*. Come—at once!

*Doeg*. What will you do?

*Merab* (*seizes vial*). At once with it.

[*Dips dagger in.*]

*Doeg*. You'll stab him?

*Merab*. As any fool? Wait. And the rest now,  
quick.

This timbrel player, Judith? is she ready?

*Doeg*. And ravishing. I've told her we shall  
send her

Sudden, as Michal is alone with David,

To seize him with insinulative kisses,  
 And arms that wind as they were wonted to him.  
 Michal once jealous—and already I  
 Have sowed suspicions——

[Laughs.

*Merab.*

May it be their rending.

[The tumult near.

But come, come, we must see; and show no frown.

[They go to look out. Shouts of "David!  
 David!" arise, and timbrelers, dancing  
 and singing, pass the tent opening;  
 then priests with the Ark and its  
 cherubim of gold. DAVID, SAUL,  
 JONATHAN, ISHUI, and the court then  
 enter amid acclamations. Before  
 them the head of Goliath is borne on  
 a charger, under a napkin. SAUL  
 darkly mounts the throne with AHI-  
 NOAM, to waving of palms and praise.

*A Woman (breaking from the throng).* Our  
little ones are saved! Hosanna! joy!

*[She kisses DAVID'S hand.*

*Jonathan.* Woman, thy tongue should know an  
angel-word,

Or seraph syllables new-sung to God!

Earth has not any rapture well for this!

David, my brother!

*David.* Jonathan, my friend!

While life has any love, know mine for you.

*Jonathan.* Then am I friended as no man was  
ever!

And though my soul were morning wide it were

Helpless to hold my wonder and delight!

O people, look upon him!

*People.* David! David!

*Jonathan.* Never before in Israel rose beauty  
Up to this glory!

*David.* Jonathan, nay——

*Jonathan.* Never!

*[Looses his robe and girdle.*

Therefore I pour him splendor passionate.  
 In gold and purple, this my own, I clothe him.  
 David, my brother!

*People.* David! David! David!

*Saul (rising up livid).* Am I to stifle, full-of-  
 lauding fools!

Of breath and ravishment unceasing!

*Ahinoam.* Saul!

*Saul.* Is it not praise enough, has he not reached  
 The skies on it?

*David.* O king, my lord——

*Saul.* Had Saul  
 Ever so rich a rapture from his son?  
 Ever this worshiping of utterance?

*David.* My lord, my lord, this should not fret  
 you.

*Doeg (derisively).* Nay!

*David.* 'Tis only that the soul of Jonathan,  
 Brimmed by the Philistines with bitterness,  
 Sudden is joy and overfloweth——

*Doeg.* Fast——



*David.* Upon his friend, thy servant, David.

*Doeg.* Aie!

[*He turns away laughing.*]

*Saul.* Why do you laugh?

*Doeg.* "Thy servant David!"

*Saul (more darkly).* Why!

*A Woman (without).* King Saul has slain his  
thousands!

*Doeg.* O-ho-ho!

*Woman.* But David his ten thousands!

*Doeg.* Do you hear?

King Saul has slain his thousands, David ten!

Thy servant, is he? servant?

*David.* Yea, O king! . . .

Therefore be wielded by no venom-word,

As a weed under the wind!

*Saul (afoam).* 'Tis overmuch!

I'll burst all bond of priest or prophecy.

Nor cringe to threatening and fondle fear.

[*He seizes a javelin.*]

I'll smite where'er I will.

*David.* My lord! my lord!

*Saul.* I'll smite, I tell you smite!

*David.* And then, O king —  
[*Goes to him.*

Have rapid palsy come upon thy hand,  
An impotence, a shriveling with fear,  
Avenging ere thou shed offenseless blood?

[*SAUL'S hand drops.*

Is this thy love, the love of Saul the king,  
Who once was kindlier than kindest are?  
For but a woman's wantonness of word  
And idle air, my life?

*Ahinoam.* Saul, Saul!

*Jonathan.* O shame!

*David.* Some enemy—does Doeg curve his  
lip?—

Hath put into her mouth this stratagem  
Of fevered, false-impassioned overpraise.

[*SAUL, tortured, sweeps from the tent, en-  
treated of JONATHAN. Many follow  
in doubt, whispering.*

*Doeg (at door, to DAVID).* This is not all, boy  
out of Bethlehem.

Goliath's dead——

*David.* But not all villainy?

[*Only MICHAL and MERAB are left.*  
*DAVID waits.*

*Merab (at length, as if loathly).* A shame it is!  
I burn for it myself!

Burn, heart and brain!

*David.* For what, and suddenly?

*Merab.* My father so ungenerously wroth!  
And wrought away from recompense so right.  
Can you forgive him?

*David.* Merab?

*Merab.* Is it strange  
That even *I* now ask it?

*David.* Merab's self?

*Merab.* Herself and not to-day your friend; but  
now  
Conquered to exultation and aglow

To wreath you for this might to Israel,  
 Beautiful, unbelievable and bright!  
 Noble the dawn of it was in your dream,  
 Noble the lightning of it in your arm,  
 And noble in your veins the fearless flow  
 And dare of blood!—so noble that I ask  
 As a remembrance and bequest forever,  
 In priceless covenant of peace between us,  
 A drop of it—

*[She draws dagger and offers it to him.]*

Upon this sacred blade . . .

*David.* Such kindness? and such honor?

*Merab.* Poor requital

To one whose greatness humbles me from hate.

*David (slowly).* Then of my veins whatever  
 drop you will.

But, no . . . (*Pauses.*) You do not mock me?

*Merab.* With high truth?

I crave it more than holy, priceless nard.

*David.* Or perfume out of India jewel poured?

*[He searches her eyes.]*

Or than—I may believe?—a miracle  
 Of dew, were you a traveler upon  
 The illimitable desert's thirst? Or than—

*[He draws his own dagger, pricks his  
 wrist, and hands it her.]*

Than this?

*Merab.* Shepherd!

*David (quickly).* Treachery, treachery, then?  
 Under a sham of tribute poison?

*Michal.* Merab!

*David.* And I of vanity should prick it in?  
 I a mere shepherd innocent of wile?  
 A singer from the shearing and no more? . . .  
 The daughter of King Saul has yet to learn.

*[She goes. He turns to MICHAL.]*

But you, fairest of all my hopes, what word!  
 The vaunting of this victory is done.  
 We are alone at last.

*Michal.* Yes.

*David.* That is all? . . .

For Israel I've wrought to-day—and for  
 You . . . who were round about me as a mist  
 Of armed mighty angels triumphing.

*Michal.* Yes: It was well.

*David.* To you no more? to you  
 Whom not a slave can serve unhonored?

*Michal (struggling).* Nothing.

*David.* Empty of glow then seems it, impotent,  
 A shriveled hallowing . . .  
 Ashes of ecstasy that burned in vain.

*Michal.* No, no! I——

*David.* Michal?

*Michal.* No, divine it was!  
 And had I cried my praise the ground had broke  
 To Eden under me with blossoming.  
 Where was so wonderful a deed as this,  
 So fair a springing of salvation up?  
 Glory above the heavens could I seize,  
 Wreathing of dawn and loveliness unfading,  
 To crown you with and crown!

*David.* O lips!

*Michal.* With but  
 A sling, a shepherd's sling, you sped the brook,  
 Drew from its bed a stone, and up the hill  
 Where the great Philistine contemning cried,  
 Mounted and flung it deep upon his brain!

*David.* This is the victory and not his death!  
 Tell, tell thy joy with kisses on my lips!  
 Thy mouth! thy arms! thy breast!

*Michal.* No, no!

*David.* Thy soul!

[*Clasps her.*]

Too much of waiting and of severance,  
 Of dread and distance and the deep of doubt!  
 Now must I fold you, falter all my love  
 And triumph on your senses till they burn  
 Beautiful as eternity with bliss.

*Michal.* Loose, loose me!

*David.* Nay, again! immortal kisses!

*Michal.* A frenzy, 'tis a frenzy! Let me free!—  
 This irremediable victory





- David.* And provoke  
Murder in him, insatiable though  
I fled upon the wilderness and famine?
- Michal.* He would not!
- David.* Nay.
- Michal.* I'll plead with him.
- David.* In vain.
- Michal (coldly).* Then . . . it is as I thought.
- David.* You are distraught.
- Michal.* This stroke to-day (*pointing to Goliath's head*) no love of me had in it.
- David.* A love, a passion fervid through me as  
The tread and tremble of seraphic song  
Along the infinite.
- Michal.* You use me!
- David.* Use?
- Michal.* A step to rise and riot in ambition!
- David.* So bitter are you, still, even in  
all?
- Michal.* You snared me to you!
- David.* Michal!

*Michal.*

Cunningly

With Samuel netted fears about my father,  
Till I am paltrily unto you pledged.

*David.* Enough.

*Michal.* Too much.

*David.* No more: the pledge I fling  
Out of my heart, as 'twere enchantment dead,  
And free you; but no more.

[*He moves from her.*]

*Michal.*

As if it were

Enchantment dead . . . Ah then 'tis true—there is  
Another—is another!

*David.* Now, what fever?

A gentleness clad once your every grace.

*Michal.* There is some other that you lure and  
love.

*David.* It is not Michal speaking; so I wait.

*Michal.* Then you will learn . . .

[*JUDITH glides in.*]

Who's that? (*to her*). Why are you here?

*Judith* (to DAVID, with a laugh, as if with amorous joy). Brave, it was brave, my love! beautiful! brave!

[Goes to him.

*David.* Woman?

*Judith.* The Philistine, a brazen tower,  
A bastion of strength, fell to the earth!

*David.* Woman, who are you? . . . Take away  
your flesh!

[She has clasped him.

Take it away, the heat and myrrh of it.

*Judith.* So cold are you? It is no longer fair?  
(Wantonly.) Oh! Ah! I understand! the princess! Oh!

[Goes laughing and shaking her timbrel  
wickedly.

*Michal.* A dancer, then, a very timbrel-player!

*David.* Until this hour I never looked upon her.  
It is chicanery of chance or craft.  
You who are noble, though in doubt adrift,  
Be noble now!

*Michal.* And loving? Oh, I will—  
Now that I know what should be done. Be sure!

*David.* Michal!

*Michal.* Now that I know what should  
be done!

*[Sweeps out. He understands and sinks to  
a seat.*

*AHINOAM enters.*

*Ahinoam.* David, the king. . . . (*Gently*) But  
what is this?

*David.* O queen . . .  
It is but life.

*Ahinoam.* Nay.

*David.* Life that ever strings  
Our hearts, so pitifully prone for it,  
To ecstasy—then snaps.

*Ahinoam.* I love thee, David.

*David.* Then gracious be, and question here no  
more,  
Where words are futile for an utterance.  
But tell on of the king.

*Ahinoam.* He's driven, still;  
 And hither comes again, and must be calmed.  
 Your harp take you, and winds of beauty bring,  
 And consolation, as of valley eves  
 When there is ebb of sorrow and of toil.  
 Oh, could you heal him and forever heal!

*David.* Then would I be——!

*[Breaks off with great desire. Takes the  
 harp and seats himself.]*

*Ahinoam.* At once, for he will come.

*[A strain of wild sadness brings SAUL,  
 and many, within. He pauses, his  
 hand to his brow, enspelled of the  
 playing: then slowly goes up the daïs.]*

*Ahinoam.* My lord, shall David sing—to ease  
 us?

*Saul.* Let him.

*David (with high sorrow).*

O heart of woe,  
 Heart of unrest and broken as a reed!

*[Plays.]*

O heart whose flow  
Is anguish and all bitterness of need!

[*Plays.*

O heart as a roe,  
Heart as a hind upon the mountain fleeing  
The arrow-wounds of being,  
Be still, O heart, and rest and do not bleed!

[*Plays longer with bowed head.*

O days of life,  
Days that are driven swift and wild from the  
womb!

[*Plays.*

O days so rife—  
Days that are torn of trouble, trod of doom!

[*Plays. MICHAL enters.*

O days of strife—  
Days of desire on deserts spread unending,  
The burning blue o'erbending,  
O days, our peace, our victory is the tomb!

[*He plays to a close that dies in anguished  
silence.*

*Saul (rising in tears).* David!

*David.* My lord?

*Saul.* Thy song is beauteous!

Stilling to sorrow! . . . Oh, my friend, my son!

*David.* To me is this? I do not dream? The  
king

Again is kind, and soft his spirit moves?

*Saul.* To you!

*David.* How shelter o'er me then will spring,  
And safety, covering!

*Saul.* It ever shall.

Loveliest have you been among my days,  
And singing weary madness from my brain.

[*MICHAL starts forward.*

How I have wronged thee!

*Michal.* Wronged him? (*in fury*).

*David.* Michal!

*Saul.* Girl?

*Michal.* You have not wronged him!

*David.* Michal!

*Michal.* No! but he  
Is jeopardy and fate about you! drive  
Him from you utterly and now away!

[*Murmurs of astonishment.*]

*Saul.* What mean you?

*Ishui.* Speak.

*Saul.* What mean you?

*Michal.* This!

*David.* No word!

*Michal.* I'll not be kept!

*David.* But shall be; for to tell  
Would rend silence forever from you—pale  
Your flesh with haunting of it evermore!  
All, all your being would become a hiss,  
A memory of syllables that sear,  
A living iteration of remorse.  
I—I myself will save your lips the words  
Of this betrayal leaping from your heart.

[*Goes nobly to SAUL.*]

You seek, my lord . . . you seek whom Samuel  
Anointed.



*Saul.* Yes.

*David.* Then know that it is I.

[*Consternation.*

*Saul.* You!

*David.* Guiltless I, no other! . . .

[*SAUL seizes a javelin.*

I, though I sought it not and suffer, though—

I would it had not come and fast am sworn

Never against you to lift up—

*Merab.* Hear, hear!

Now he will cozen!

*Doeg.* He, “thy servant!”

*Ishui.* Hear!

[*Goliath's head is upset.*

*A Voice.* A thousand Saul hath slain! but David  
ten!

*Saul (choking).* Omnipotence shall not with-  
hold me more.

[*Lifts javelin.*

Die, die!

*Jonathan.* No, father . . . hold!

*Michal* (as SAUL flings). What have I done?

[Reels.

*Jonathan*. David, unhurt? Away, the wilderness!

*Saul* (with another javelin). He shall not, no!

*David*. Then king of Israel —!

[Rushes up the throne, aflame.

Murderous king, afoam with murder-heat,

Strike me to darkness and the waiting worm! —

But after be your every breathing blood!

Remorse and riving bitterness and fear!

Be guilt and all the hideous choke of horror!

[SAUL trembling cowers, the javelin falling from him. DAVID breaks, then, through the throng and escapes by the door. MICHAL sinks to her knees, her face buried in her hands.

CURTAIN

## ACT III

This page in the original text is blank.

## ACT III

SCENE: *A savage mountain cliff in the wilderness of Engeddi. On either side gray crags rise rugged, sinking away precipitously across the back. Cut into each is a cave. The height is reached by clefts from all sides. Between the crags to the East is the far blue of the Dead Sea; and still beyond, bathed in the waning afternoon, stretch the purple shores of Moab. During the act the scene grows crimson with sunset and a thundercloud arises over the sea. Lying on a pallet of skins near the cliff's verge, DAVID tosses feverishly. Three of his followers and a lad, who serves him, are gathered toward the front, ragged, hungry, and hunted, in altercation over a barley cake.*

*David.* Water! the fever fills me, and I thirst.  
Water!

*First Fol.* Listen.

*Second Fol.* He calls.

*David.* Water! I thirst.

*The Lad.* Yes, yes, my lord. (*Takes up a water skin.*) Ah, empty, not a quaff!

They've drunk it all from him! My lord, none's left.

I'll run and in the valley brim it soon.

[*He goes.* DAVID *sinks back.*

*Second Fol.* (*to FIRST*). You drank it, then.

*First Fol.* And should I thirst, not he?

Give me the bread.

*Second Fol.* If it would strangle you.

*First Fol.* I'll have it.

*Second Fol.* Or betray him? spitingly?

It is the last. Already you have eat.

And we are here within a wilderness.

*First Fol.* Be it, but I'll not starve.

*Third Fol.* He utters right.

Why should we but to follow a mere shepherd

Famish—over a hundred desert hills?

The prophecy portending him the throne—  
Is folly, not fate! though it is Samuel's.  
I'll trust in it no more.

*First Fol.*

Nor I.

*Third Fol.*

And Saul

Has driven us from waste to waste—pressed us  
Even unto the Philistines for shelter,  
And now unto this crag. And does not David  
Brood but of Michal, not of smiting him  
And, with a host, of leaping to the kingdom?

[DAVID *stirs to rise.*

*First Fol.* He moves; peace!

*Third Fol.*

Let him.

*Second Fol.*

Peace.

*Third Fol.*

And fawning too?

*David (sufferingly).* Men—men, we must have  
news. Perpetual,

Implacable they stare unto each other,  
This rock and stony sky. . . . We must have news.

[*Rises and comes down to them. They  
are silent.*

Longer is death. 'Tis over many days  
Of sighing—and remembered verdancy;  
Remembered here, where dew comes never up.  
Who will go now and bring us word of Saul?

*Third Fol.* Have not Abishai, Abiathar,  
And others gone?

*David.* Bravely.

*Third Fol.* And none returned!

*David.* Not one of all.

*Third Fol.* Well, then, we are not swine;  
And life's but once. . . . So we will follow you  
No longer hungered and rewarded never,  
But perilously ever.

*David.* It is well.

*[He looses a bracelet from his arm.]*

This was a gift from Saul. In it is ease.

*[Gives it THIRD FOLLOWER, who goes.]*

This ring was Jonathan's. The jewel tells  
Still of the sunny haven of his heart.



Upon my hand he pressed it—the day we leapt  
Deeper than friends into each other's love.

[*Gives it to FIRST, who goes.*]

This chain——

*Second Fol.* I want it not.

*David.* You have not thought ;

'Tis riches—such as Sidon marts and Tyre  
Would covet.

*Second Fol.* I care not.

*David.* None else is left.

*Second Fol.* No matter. I but want . . . There  
was of Gibeah

A woman—dear to me. Her face at night . . .  
Weeping among my dreams. . . .

The prophecy

Is unfulfilled and vain !

*David.* And you would go ?

*Second Fol.* The suffering—this cliff.

*David.* I understand.

(*Motions.*) So, without any blame, go—to content.

[*The SECOND, faltering, goes.*]

(*Quietly.*) A desolation left, of rock and air,  
 Of barren sea and bitterness as vast.  
 Thou hast bereft me, Saul! . . . and Michal, thou!

*[He moves up cliff, gazes off, then kneels  
 as to pray.]*

My flesh cries for oblivion—to sink  
 Unwaking away into the night . . . where is  
 No tears, but only tides of sleep. . . .

No, crieth

Not for oblivion and night, but for  
 Rage and revenge! Saul! Saul! . . . My spirit,  
 peace.

I must revenge's call within me quell  
 Though righteously it quivers and aflame.  
 As pants the hart for the water-brook, so I!

*[He bows his head. . . . MICHAL enters in  
 rags with the lad. She sees DAVID  
 rise and wander into cave, right.]*

*Michal.* This is the place, then, this?

*Lad.* Yes, princess.

*Michal.*

Here

So long in want and sickness he hath hid?

Under the livid day and lonelier night?

*Lad.* I brought him water, often.

*Michal.*

Little lad!

But he has heard no word from me?—not how

My father, Saul, frantic of my repentance,

Had unto Phalti, a new lord, betrothed me?

How then I fled to win unto these wilds?

*Lad.* He heard not anything—only the tales  
I told of Moab, my own land. . . . But, oh!

[DAVID *plays within.*

It is his harp.

*Michal.* And strains that weep o'er me! . . .  
I'll speak to him . . . and yet must be unknown!  
A leper? as a leper could I . . .?

*Lad.*

Why

Must he not know you?

*Michal.*

Ask me not, lad, now;

But go a little.

*Lad.*                    Yes.

[*He sets down the water skin and goes.*

*Michal* (*delaying, then in a loud voice*). Unclean! Unclean!

[*Conceals her face in her hair.*

*David.* Who crieth here?

*Michal.*                    Unclean!

*David* (*appearing*).                    Who cries unclean?

Poor leper in these wilds, who art thou?

*Michal.*                    One

Outcast and faint, forlorn!

*David.*                    Then you have come

To one more bitter outcast than yourself—

One who has less than this lone void to give,

This sterile solitude and sun, this scene

Of leaden desolation that makes mad;

Who has no ease but cave or shading rock,

Or the still moon, or stars that glide the night.

One over whom——

*Michal.*                    Yet, pity!

*David* (*slowly*).                    The pale hours

Flow dead into eternity.

*Michal.* Ah, yet . . . !

*David.* My cloak, then, for thy tattered limbs.

Or, no—

This chain of Ophir for thy every need.

Once it was dear, but should be so no more.

*(Flinging it to her.)* Have it, and with it vanish  
memory

Out of my breast—

*Michal.* No, no.

*David.* And from me fall

Link upon link her loveliness that bound.

*Michal.* Oh, do not!

*David (starting)* Woman . . . ?

*Michal.* Nothing. A chain like this

I once beheld wind undulantly bright

O'er Michal the king's daughter.

*David.* Woman, the king's?

*Michal.* Pity!

*David.* Who are you?

*Michal.* Stay! Unclean!

*David.* A spy?

A spy of Saul and hypocrite have crept  
Hither to learn . . .?

*Michal.* Have heed—unclean!

*David.* How, then  
Wandering came you here?

*Michal.* Unclean! Unclean!

*David.* My brain is overfull of fever, mad.  
Almost and I had touched thy peril, held  
Thy hideous contagion.

*Michal.* Nay!

*David.* Then who  
Art thou to know and speak of her, of Michal?

*Michal.* One who has served the king.

*David.* And you have seen  
Michal, you have beheld her?

*Michal.* Once, when she  
In face was fairer and in heart than now  
They say she is.

*David.* And heard her speak?

*Michal.*

A night

Under the leaves of Gibeah—when she  
Sang with another—David.

*David.*

Say no more.

*Michal.* And from afar, under the moon, blew  
faint

The treading of the wine-presses with song.  
David she loved, but anger-torn betrayed,  
Unworthy of him.

*David.*

Speak of her no more,

Nor of her cruelty, unless to pray  
He she has ruined may forget her.

*Michal.*

Yet

If deep she should repent?—if deep she should?

[*A cry interrupts. They start.*]

*David.* A jackal? (*Listens.*) No, the signal!

Word at last!

(*To MICHAL.*) He who is near may prove to thee  
less kind.

[*She goes. He leaps up the cliff.*]

Abishai? Abiathar? . . . It is!

But staggering and wounded? breathless? torn?

The priest with bloody ephod, too, and wild?

*[Watching, then springing to meet them  
as they reel in.]*

Abishai, what is it that you bring?

Abiathar, up! answer!

*Abiathar.*                      Water!

*David.*                                      Up!

*[He brings the water skin. They drain it  
fiercely.]*

What is it now so fevered from you stares,

And breathing, too, abhorrence? Gasp it out.

*Abiathar.* I stifle—in a universe—he still—  
Has breath in.

*David.*                      Saul?

*Abiathar.*                      Ill scathe him! Scorpions  
Of terror and remorse sting in his soul!

*David.* If you have tidings, tell in words less  
wild.

*Abiathar.* Then ask, and hate shall calm me.



*David.* Ask?

*Abiathar.* On, on!

Seek if he lives!

*David.* Who?

*Abiathar.* Seek if prophecy

Founts yet in Judah!

*David.* Samuel . . . ?

*Abiathar.* Is dead!

Dead—and of tidings more calamitous.

[*A pause.*]

*David (hoarsely).* Tell on. I hear.

*Abiathar.* Saul gloating to believe  
The priests who gathered sacredly at Nob,  
Plotted assisting you, hath had them—

*David.* No . . . !

*Abiathar.* Slain at the hands of Doeg—mur-  
dered, all!

*David.* But he—your father?

*Abiathar.* Was among them; fell.

[*He stands motionless.*]

*David (gently).* Abiathar, my friend! . . . Ap-  
peaseless Saul!

*Abiathar.* Hear all, hear all! Thy father, too,  
and mother,

Even thy kindred, out of Israel  
Are driven into Moab; and this king,  
Delirious still for blood as desert pards,  
With Merab, whelp of him, and many armed,  
Is near us now—a-quiver at Engeddi  
For your destruction:

[*DAVID struggles for control.*

And yet you will not strike.

*David (low).* No, but of Michal, tell me good  
at once,

Lest unendurable this lot, I *may*—

Mounting o'er every oath into revenge.

*Abiathar.* Ha—Michal!

*David.* She withholds her father's wrath?

*Abiathar.* She's well.

*David.* Not if you say no more.

*Abiathar.* I know  
Nothing of her.

*David.* Your look belies.

*Abiathar.* Perhaps:  
As did her love.

*David.* That is for me.

*Abiathar.* Well, what?  
A woman who betrays?

*David.* Speak, not evade;  
And judge her when earth has no mystery.

*Abiathar.* Then from your craving put her—  
for—she is  
Unworthy any tremor of your veins.

*David.* Dawn-lilies under dew are then un-  
worthy,  
And nesting doves are horrible to heaven.  
I will not so believe. Your reason?

*Abiathar.* Saul  
Has given her—and she will wed him, aye—  
To Phalti, a new lord.

*David.* Untrue of her!

*Abiathar.* Cry. Yet you will believe it.

*David.* Not until

The parable of verdant Spring is hushed  
 Ever of bloom, to prove it. Never till  
 Hermon is swung into the sea! until  
 The last void of the everlasting sky—

*[Looking up, he falters, breaks off, and is  
 strangely moved.]*

*Abiathar.* Now what alarm?

*Abishai.* What stare you on?

*Abiathar.* He's mad?

*[Then, suddenly seeing.]*

No, no! . . . an eaglet! . . . Pierct! . . .

*David (watching).* And falling here. . . .  
 And beating against death unbuoyantly.

*[The bird drops at their feet.]*

A destiny, a fate in this is hidden!

*[Bends to it.]*

*Abiathar.* And—why?

*David (starts back).* The arrow is his! his, and  
no other's!

Quick, no delay. Efface all trace of us.

[*Takes water skin.*]

*Abiathar.* But how? be clear.

*David.* We are discovered—in!

On us is death. Open the secret chamber  
Amid the cave, for from the bow of Saul  
Is yonder bleeding—from no other.

*Abiathar.* Saul's?

So soon! was any here?

*David.* To-day, to-day.

A leper wandering.

*Abiathar.* We are betrayed.

[*ABISHAI hastes to cave, right, DAVID and  
ABIATHAR listen. Noise of approach  
is heard.*]

*David.* They near.

*Abiathar.* And many.

*David.* King of Israel!

Inexorable!

*Abiathar.* O, rebuke him, do!

*David.* Almost I am beyond this tolerance.

*Abiathar.* In truth. Therefore it is you rise  
and shake

Out of his power the scepter!

*David.* Tempt me not!

Mercy and memory almost are dead,  
And craving birth in me is fateful ire.

*[But a shout rings out as they flee, into the  
cave: yet hardly have done so when SAUL  
and his men pour in.]*

*Saul.* On, to him! search the caves! in, in, and  
bring

Him to my sword and Michal with him.

*(Pacing.)*

They

Shall couch upon eternity and dust.

(*Weakly.*) I am the king and Israel is mine. . . .  
 I'll sleep upon their grave, I'll sleep upon it,  
 And hear the worm. . . .!

[*To a soldier reëntering from one cave.*

Where is he? Bring him.

*Soldier.* O king—

*Saul.* You've slain him and you tremble! Say  
 it.

*Soldier.* No.

*Saul.* Then hither with him; hither!

*Soldier.* He's not here.

*Saul.* A treachery! You cunningly contrive  
 To aid him, so. . . .

[*To a soldier from the other cave.*

Bring me his head.

*Soldier (fearfully).* My lord,  
 He is not there. . . .

*Saul.* I tell you it is lies—  
 Because you deem that he shall be the king,

And treasure up reward and amnesty.

*[Rushes wildly to caves in turn, then out  
among them.]*

From me ill-fruited, ineffectual herd!

Away from me, he's fled and none of you

Is servant and will find and for me seize him!

*[They scatter.]*

From me—I'll sleep—I'll rest—and then—

*[As they go.]*

I'll sleep.

*[ABNER and DOEG remain. SAUL enters  
cave, left.]*

*Abner* (to *Doeg*, significantly). The Evil Spirit,  
and none is here to heal him.

*Doeg*. It came as never before—as drunken-  
ness.

*Abner*. Then—safe to leave him?

*Doeg*. Will he brook denial?

*Abner*. And Merab, too, will soon be here.

*Doeg*. Well, come.



*Abner.* I'll go and look upon him.

[*Goes.*

(*Returning.*) Already he sleeps.

So we may seek us water; (*then suddenly*) no,  
abide!

[*Is held by MICHAL entering.*

Woman, who are you, who?

*Michal* (*quaking*). Unclean! away!

*Doeg.* Unclean? a leper? in this place? Are  
there

No stones to stone you? Hence! And had I not  
A brother such as thou——

*Michal.*

Pity! Unclean!

[*She quickly goes, then they. A space;  
then she returns, trembling and fearful.*

I'll call him! I will save him! David! David!—  
I his discomfiture and ruin!—David!

[*Searches.*

Hear, David! hear me! David!

[Sees SAUL.

The king! My father!

I cannot—am not—whither shall I, whither . . . ?

[Flees, as a scuffling is heard and DAVID'S  
voice.

*David.* Loose me, I say. 'Twas Michal, and she  
called!

[Appears, withheld by ABIATHAR.

(*Breaking free.*) I say that it was she!

*Abiathar.* Foolhardy, no;

Return into the cave, and ere too late!

[MERAB, veiled, enters behind them.

*David.* 'Twas Michal and no other.

*Abiathar.* You are duped.

*David* (*scarching*). The breathing of arch-  
angels could not so

Have swung the burden from me as her . . . Ha!

[Sees MERAB; slowly recoils.

*Merab.* It is not Michal.

*David.* No—it is not Michal.

[*Motions the priest aside.*]

*Merab.* Yet it is one who——

*David.* Need not lift her veil,

Or longer stay. The path she came is open.

*Merab.* I'm here—and here will speak. I've  
hither stolen,

Yearning—I say it—yearning—and I will.

*David.* These words I do not know.

*Merab.* Because you will not.

More all-devouring than a Moloch is

This love within me——

*David.* Love and you are twain,  
As sun and Sheol.

*Merab.* False. I am become  
For want of you as famine-wind, a wave  
In the mid-tempest, with no rest, no shore.

*David.* I do not hear the unashamed words  
Of one who has but recently another,  
Adriel, wedded.

*Merab.* You refuse me, then?

*David.* I beg you but to cease.

*Merab.* Goaded, chagrined?

No, but this will I do. The Philistines,  
For long at rioting within their walls,  
Gather again and break toward Gilboa. . . .

*David.* Merab of Saul!

*Merab.* To-morrow must my father  
Return from hunting you and arm for battle.  
But—many would that you were king.

*David.* Were . . . ?

*Merab.* King!

*David.* I do not understand your eyes.

*Merab.* I will

For love of you arouse rebellion up,  
Murmur about the host your heaven-call,  
And lift you to the kingdom.

*David.* To the—Stay!  
Your words again.

*Merab.* The kingdom.

*David.* Awful God!

*Merab.* What is your mien? you will not?

*David.* Twice the words—  
Full from her lips—and to betray her father.

[ABIATHAR *discovers* SAUL.

*Merab.* You will not? answer!

*David.* Odious utterly!  
As yonder sea of death and bitter salt!  
As foam-girt Joppa of idolatry,  
As Memphian fane of all abhorrencies!

[*A pause.*

Morning would move with horror of it, noon  
A livid sepulcher of shame span o'er,  
And night shrink to remember day had been!

*Merab.* You scorn—you scorn me?

*David.* Jonathan! your sister!

*Merab.* Then Saul shall rend you dead. And  
Jonathan! . . .

[*She laughs shrilly.*

Perchance you had not heard that Jonathan  
Knows to the Philistines you fled—and loathes you!

*David.* I have not heard.

*Merab.* Nor have not, ah? how Michal  
Is given to the embraces of another?

[DAVID *shrinks.*

You desperately breathe and pale at last?

[*She laughs more bitterly.*

To me for aid, to me you yet shall come.

[*She goes. DAVID lifts his hand to his  
brow in pain. Then ABIATHAR  
abruptly descends from SAUL'S cave  
to him.*

*Abiathar.* David——

*David.* Leave me.

*Abiathar.* Not till you know—and strike!

*David.* I tell you, go.

*Abiathar.* I tell you 'tis the king.

*David.* Who breaks forbearance—yes.

*Abiathar.* Who lieth yonder,  
And sleeping lieth—for a thrust to end.

*David (his sword quickly out—struggling).*

Then shall there be an ending—of these wounds  
That wring me—of this wail

Under the deeps of me against his wrongs.

Saul, Saul! . . . Michal! . . . Oh, never-ceasing  
ill!

*[Flings down the sword in anguish.]*

*Abiathar.* You will not come?

*David.* The sun—is set.

*Abiathar.* Has Saul

Hunted you to this desert's verge?

*David.* Enough!

*Abiathar.* Has he pursued you, all his hate un-  
leashed?

Are Samuel—the priests, not slain? my father?

The kingdom is not in decay, and falls?

You are not prophecy's anointed one?

Seize up the sword and strike—or I myself!

*David.* Or—you yourself? . . .

*[Puts them aside, takes sword, and goes  
to SAUL'S cave.]*

*Abishai.* What will he do? . . . listen

*MICHAL enters unseen.*

*Abiathar.* If Saul cries out——

*Abishai.* Be ready.

*Michal (to them).* What is this?

[DAVID reënters—haggard and wild; a  
piece of SAUL'S cloak and the sword  
still in his hand. . . .

*Michal (when she sees him, with a cry).* Ah,  
you have slain—have slain him? wretch of God?  
And sleeping as he was? slain him in sleep?  
And merciless? (*as rage takes DAVID*) and now  
will slay me too?

*David (who has seized her hand yet speaks as to the  
skies).* She is the leper then, in faithless rags.  
Who drove me a prey upon this wilderness!  
Upon the blot of it and death and sear!  
The silence and relentless burning swoon!  
She is the leper, who has broken troth  
And shut the cry of justice from her breast!  
Who's stifled with me desolation's woe,  
Who's followed still and still has me betrayed!

*Michal.* Betrayed? No, loose me!



*David.* Slain thy father? slain?  
[*Flinging the piece of SAUL'S cloak at her feet.*]

See how I might—see, see you, yonder he lies,  
A king who quits the kingdom, though a cloud  
Of Philistines is foaming toward Gilboa;  
Jeoparded leaves it, undefended, for  
Pursuit of me and pitiless harrying!  
A king who murders priests. . . .

*Michal.* Priests?

*David.* Stifles God  
With penitence that He has shaped the world!  
Have slain? have slain him! I have slain him!

Ah!

Ah, that I had thy falseness and could slay him!

*Michal.* David . . . !

*David.* Nevermore near me! never with  
Thy quivering—thy tenderness—thy lure—  
Thy eyes that hold infinity of fate—  
Thy breathing cassia-sweet, but sorcery!

*Michal.* Oh . . .

*David.* Never thy presence pouring beauty,  
swift,  
And seething in the brain as frantic wine!  
I'll be no more enspelled of thee—never!  
I will not hear thee and be wound by words  
Into thy wile as wide as Ashtoreth's;  
Rather, O God . . . eternity of pain!

*[He goes in agony—the priest and ABI-SHAI after. MICHAL stands gazing tearless before her as SAUL, awakened, comes slowly from the mouth of the cave down toward her.]*

CURTAIN

## ACT IV

This page in the original text is blank.

## ACT IV

SCENE: *The house of MIRIAM, the "Witch of Endor," by Mount Gilboa—where SAUL is encamped against the Philistines. It is of one story, built rectangularly about an inner court, which is dimly lighted. Under the gallery which ranges around the court are doors leading to the sleeping and other apartments; before one of these, a lattice. On the left is the gate opening to the street. At the back to one side, the teraphim, or image of divination; on the other side a stairway mounts to the roof. Above is the night and vague lightning amid a moan of wind. During the Act comes dawn. Forward on a divan sits MIRIAM alone, in blind restlessness.*

*Miriam.* Adah! . . . The child is sunken in a sleep.

Yet would I have her near me in this night,  
 And hear again the boding of her tale.  
 Unto the blind the vision and the awe  
 Of the invisible sway ever in,  
 The shadow of nativities that lead  
 Upon fatality.

Girl! Adah! Girl!

*[The wind passes. ADAH enters from a chamber, rubbing her eyes.]*

Thou art awake?

*Adah.* I slumbered.

*Miriam.* Stand you where  
 Fathoming I may feel within you. Now,  
 Again: you've hither fled your mistress Merab,  
 In fear of her?

*Adah.* Yes.

*Miriam.* At Engeddi Michal  
 By Saul was apprehended? Merab now  
 Plotteth against her—she and Doeg?

*Adah.*

Still.

*Miriam.* And 'twas in Merab's tent you heard,  
the king

Despairing of to-morrow's battle, comes  
Hither to-night to bid me lift the spirit  
Of Samuel out of the dead and learn  
The issue?

*Adah.* Doeg said it.

*Miriam.* And—you hear?—

Many within the army urge for David,  
Would cry him king, if Saul were slain?

*Adah.* O many.

*[A knock at the gate. They start up  
fearful.]*

*Miriam.* Who seeks blind Miriam of Endor's  
roof,

Under the night and unextinguished storm?  
Come you a friend?

*David (without).* A friend.

*Miriam.* As knows my soul!

[*Throws open the gate. DAVID enters and  
ABIATHAR cloaked.*]

Thy voice again!—this blindness of my eyes—  
If it be David, speak.

*David.* Yes, *Miriam.*

*Miriam.* David of Jesse, Israel's desire!  
Let me behold thee (*her hands go over him*) with  
my fingers' sight,  
And gather in them touch of thee again!  
Thy voice is as dream-dulcimers that stir  
The silent deeps of memory and joy.  
But, aie! why are you here? You have been  
*there?*

*David.* Yes—in the camp of Saul.

*Miriam.* In spite of Death!

Do you not know——

*David.* I know—that Saul would rather  
O'er-trample me than a multitude of foes.  
That it is told him I who shun his ire—  
Though death were easier, if dutiful—



Am come up with the Philistines to win  
The kingdom. That he would slay me though I  
fought

For Israel!—But, Michal!—

*Miriam.* Aie——

*David.* What brews?

She was not in the camp.

*Miriam.* Men all are mad!

And you who should be never.

*David.* She is in

Some peril.

*Miriam.* You, in more! And must from here  
Swiftly away, for Saul is——

*David.* I must see her.

*Miriam.* Unholy!

*David.* Yet unholier were flight.

*Miriam.* You are the anointed!

[*A heavy knock at the gate.*

Ah, calamity!

You would not heed—'tis Saul!

*David.* Here?

*Miriam.* He is come  
That I shall call up Samuel.

*David.* You, you—?  
The awful dead?

*Saul (calls).* Woman of Endor!

*Miriam.* Hide!  
The lattice yonder!

*Saul.* Woman of Endor! Woman!

[DAVID and ABIATHAR *withdraw. The  
knocking hastier.*

Woman of Endor! Woman of Endor! Woman!

*Miriam.* Who crieth at my gate?

*Saul.* Unbar and learn-

*Miriam.* To danger?

*Saul.* None!

*Miriam.* To thieves?

*Saul.* To rueing if  
You tarry!

[*She lets him in, with ISHUI and ADRIEL.*

*Miriam.* Whom seek you?

*Saul.* Witch of Endor, you,  
Who of the fate-revealing dead divine.  
Out of the Pit you call them!

*Miriam.* What is this?

*Saul.* I say that you can raise them!

*Miriam.* You are come  
With snaring! knowing well that Saul the king  
Is woe and bitterness to all who move  
With incantation.

*Saul.* He is not.

*Miriam.* Depart!

*Saul.* I must have up out of the Awfulness  
Him I would question.

*Miriam.* Perilous!

*Saul.* Prepare  
Before thy teraphim. No harm, I swear,  
Shall come of it. Bid Samuel appear.  
The battle! its event!

*Miriam (with a cry).* I know thee now!  
Saul! thou art Saul! the Terror!

*Saul.* Call him up.

Ready is it, the battle—but I am  
 Forsaken of all prophecy and dream,  
 Of voices and of priest and oracle,  
 To augur it.

*Miriam.* A doom's in this!

*Saul.* He must  
 Hold comfort, and the torrent of despair  
 Within me stay and hush.

*Miriam (slowly).* Then must it be.

*[Has sunk by the teraphim, and incants  
 amid wind and lightning.]*

Prophet of Israel, who art beyond  
 The troubling and the terrifying grave,  
 Th' immeasurable moan and melancholy  
 Of ways that win to Sheol—Rise! Arise!

*[She waits . . . Only the wind gust.]*

*Then up, with wide-stretched arms, and  
 with wild blind eyes.*

Prophet of Israel, arise! Not in  
 The name of Baal, Amon, Ashtoreth,

Dagon or all the deities that dream  
 In trembling temples of Idolatry,  
 But of Jehovah! of Jehovah! rise!

*[An elemental cry is heard out of the earth.  
 Then wavering forms rise, vast, in  
 continuous stream. MIRIAM, with a  
 curdling shriek, sinks moaning to her  
 knees.]*

*Saul.* Woman, I cannot—dare not—look upon it.  
 Utter thy sight.

*[The Spirit of SAMUEL begins to take  
 shape through the phantoms.]*

*Miriam.* I see . . . ascending  
 Forms as of gods in swaying ghostliness,  
 Dim apparitions of a dismal might,  
 And now is one within a mantle clad,  
 Who looketh——

*Saul.* Samuel!

*Miriam.* Who looketh with  
 Omniscience in his mien, and there is chill

About him and the cling of eternity!

His eyes impale me!

*Saul.* Spirit, give me word!

*[He falls heavily to the ground.]*

*Samuel (as afar).* O evil king! and wretched  
king! why hast

Thou brought me from the quietness and rest?

*Saul.* The battle on the morrow—

*Samuel.* Evil thou art

For underneath this night thou hast conspired

Death to thy daughter Michal—if at dawn

The battle shall be lost—lest she may fall

Into the hands of David.

*David (in horror).* O!

*Ishui.* Whose cry?

*Samuel.* I tell thee, Saul, thy scepter shrivels  
fast.

The battle shall be lost—it shall be lost.

*[The Spirit of SAMUEL disappears. A wail  
of wind.]*

*Adriel.* Ishui, true? Is Michal to be slain?

*Ishui.* This is no hour for fools and questioning.

*Saul (struggling up).* The battle, Ishui, at once  
command

It shall begin! To Jonathan and say it.

[*ISHUI goes.*

No prophecy shall sink me and no shade.

I am the king, and Israel, my own.

[*Frenzied he goes. A silence.*

*David (breaking forth).* Michal to die and  
Israel to fall!

Prophet of prophets, Samuel, return!

Out of the Shadow and the Sleep, return,

Compassionate, and tell me where she is,

That I may save. Again appear and say

That Israel to-morrow may not fall—

Not fall on ruin!

*Adriel.* David? is it thou?

*David.* Meholah's Adriel, your conscience asks.

*Adriel.* You were concealed?

*David.* And I have heard. Cry then  
Out unto Saul! Betray me, cry you out!

*Adriel.* Betray?

*David.* Is the word honey? Is it balm?

*Adriel.* David, I've wronged you—

*David.* Haply!

*Adriel.* Jealously.

And ask now no forgiveness—not until  
Michal is won from peril!

*David.* Do you know  
More of her? still?

*Adriel.* I only know that Saul—

[*Fearful.*

Has given Doeg power—

And that somewhere in Endor he conceals her.

*David.* God!

*Adriel.* Ay, and that himself's not far  
away.

*David.* Ahaste, and bring him then by force or  
guile,



In any way, that we may from him win  
Where she is prisoned.

[ADRIEL goes.

The quivering  
Quicksands of destiny beneath her stir.  
Is heaven a mocking shield that ever keeps  
God from our prayers?

*Miriam.* David, contain thy heart.

[*A faint uproar begins afar; and dawn.*

*David.* The battle! on the wind. Abiathar,  
Speed out upon the mountain-side and cull  
All that befalls.

[*ADAH opens the gate. The priest goes.*

*Adah (springing back).* Oh!

*David.* Child, why do you quail?

*Adah.* My mistress, Merab!

*David.* Girl?

*Adah.* I saw her—she—

Is coming hither! Do not let her—she—

I fear—I fear her!

*David.* Hither coming?

*Adah.*

She!

[*The gate is thrown open fiercely.*]

*Merab (entering).* Woman and witch, did Adriel, my husband,  
Come to you with the king?

[*Sees DAVID, stops.*]

*David.* Unnatural,  
Unkind, most cruel sister!

*Merab (shrinks).* You are here?

*David.* Once me you would have poisoned, but  
the coil  
Within your bosom I beheld. And now  
Michal your sister is the victim.

*Merab.* I—  
Know not your meaning.

*David.* The battle burning yonder,  
If it adversely veers, the king has planned  
Michal is not to live lest she may hap  
Unto my arms.

*Merab.* That Michal shall be slain?

*[The tumult again.]*

*David.* Almighty, smite, and save to Thee thy people!

And save Thy altars unto Israel!

*[He bows his head. A stir comes at the gate.]*

*Merab.* David, 'tis Adriel!

*Adriel.* Ope! open, you!

*David.* At last the word.

*Merab.* Girl, Adah, draw the bar.

*[She does, with awe, as DAVID cloaks his face. ADRIEL enters, and DOEG, who pauses in quick alarm, as DAVID goes between him and the gate.]*

*Doeg.* What place is this? Why do you bar that gate?

*Merab,* 'tis you? Why do you gaze, rigid?

And this is the blind witch, Miriam?

*David.* It is.

*[He throws off the cloak.]*

*Doeg.* Lured? I am snared? a trap?

*David.* Where have you Michal?

*Doeg (drawing).* No closer!

*David.* If she is an atom harmed——!

Where is she?

*Doeg.* I was the servant of the king,  
I but obey him.

*David.* And thy horrible heart.  
Then speak, or unto frenzy I am driven.

*Doeg.* I'll drive you there with——

[*Breaks off with low laugh.*]

*David.* Tell it!

*Doeg.* Unto your  
Soft sympathy—and passion? (*Laughs.*) She is  
dead.

*David (immovable, then repressed).*

If it is so, the lightning, that is wrath  
Within the veins of God, should sink its fang  
Into thy bosom and sear out thy heart.  
If it is so, this momentary calm,  
This silence pouring overfull the world,

Would rush and in thee cry until thy bones  
 Broken of guilt are crumbled in thy groans.  
 Dead, she is dead?

*Miriam (starting).* No, David, my lord, he lies!  
 [*Strangely, as in a trance.*]

To wound you, lies!

*David.* Not dead?

*Miriam.* I see her eyes!  
 [*All listen amazed.*]

I see her in a vision. She is near—  
 Is in a cave—is bound—and is alone.  
 I will go to her—quickly bring her.

*Doeg.* Not—  
 [*Lunges at her.*]

If this shall reach you.

*David.* Ah! . . . and, near, it did!  
 [*Guards MIRIAM out.*]

But now, O plotter, bloody, false, and foul,  
 Who as a pestilence of midnight marsh  
 Have oozed corruption into all around you,  
 Now shall the realm be free of you at last.

Within its arteries you've flowed, poison,  
 Incentive of irruption and unrest,  
 Of treachery and disaffection's sore,  
 Till even the stars that light it seemed as tares.  
 Sown hostile o'er the nightly vale of heaven.

*[Draws firmly. Coldly, skillfully approaches for attack.]*

*Doeg (retreating).* No farther!

*David.* Unto the end! unto the end!

*[He rushes in; they engage; DOEG is wounded.]*

Your villainy is done.

*[Quickly forces him under. The gate then opens and ABIATHAR hurries in.]*

*Abiathar.* David, the battle——!

*[Sees DOEG and stops, pale.]*

*David.* Fetter him.

*Abiathar.* Only fetter? (*His dagger out*) the  
 murderer

Of priestly sanctity and of my father?

*David.* Abiathar! You know obedience?

[DOEG is sullenly bound and led aside.  
Then a panic is heard afar, and dim  
laments. DAVID, who has sunk to a  
seat, springs anxiously up.

Listen! that cry!

*A Voice.* Woe! woe!

*David.* What is its wail?

*The Voice.* The battle's lost!

*David.* Abiathar—?

*The Voice.* Saul flees!

*David.* Abiathar, is lost?

*Abiathar.* I fear it.

*David.* Then, (*pointing to DOEG*)

Off with his armor for me. I will go

And backward bend defeat, backward bend it!

Duty to Saul is over.

*Adriel.* You must not.

A fruitless intrepidity it were.

*Abiathar.* Remember your anointing!





*David.*                    Betrayers should have none.

*Michal.* I was a woman—the entanglement  
Of duty amid love we have no skill  
To loosen, but with passion.

*David.*    You too late  
Remember it is so.

*Michal.*                    Nobility  
All unbelievable it seemed that you  
Could innocently wait on time to tide  
You to the kingdom. Then forgive, I plead.

*David.* But, in the wilderness, your perfidy!

*Michal.* Doubt of it welletth thro' your voice.

No, no,  
To save you strove I——!

*David.*    Michal!

*Michal.*    Not to betray!  
From Saul, my father, penitent I fled,  
Seeking you in Engeddi's wild.

*David.*    And Phalti?

*Michal.* 'Twas wedding him I loathed.

*David.*    Say true!

*Michal.* This knife  
Unfailingly into my breast had sunk  
And spared me, had not flight.

*David.* This—this can be?

*[A great joy dawning in him.]*

Beyond all hope it is, even as day's  
Wide empery outspans our littleness.  
A tithing of thy loveliness were beauty  
Enough for earth. Yet it is mine, is mine?

*Michal.* David . . . . !

*[Is starting to his arms, but cries beat back  
their joy. Then the gate is flung open  
and ADRIEL enters, shaken. He looks  
from one to the other.]*

*David (at last).* Adriel! Adriel!

What have you?

*Adriel.* Saul—is slain!

*Michal.* My father?

*Adriel.* Slain!

And Jonathan—

*David.* No!

*Adriel.* Fell beside him down. . . .

The fray was fast—Israel fled—the foe  
Fierce after Saul, whom Jonathan defended.

*Michal.* My father!

*David.* And my brother Jonathan!  
If I believe it will not miracle  
Alone bring joy again unto my pain?

*[Then as wails arise.*

O Israel, the Infinite has touched  
Thy glory and it changes to a shroud!  
Thy splendor is as vintage overspilt,  
For Saul upon the mountains low is lying,  
And Jonathan beside him, beautiful  
Beyond the mar of battle and of death.  
Yea, kingly Jonathan! And I would give  
The beating of my life into his veins.  
Willing for it would I be drouth and die! . . .

*[As the wails rearise*

Yea, peaks of curst Gilboa, I would die!  
So let dew leave you, and as sackcloth let

Clouds cover you, and ashes be your soil,  
Until I bring upon Philistia  
And Gath and Askalon extinguishing,  
And sorrow—and immensity of tears!

*[Relieved, and going to MICHAL who dazedly  
weeps.]*

But we must calm the flowing of this grief,  
For tho we cannot see now thro our pain,  
How love, as sandal-breath and trickling balm,  
Will heal us in the unbegotten years,  
Too headlong must not be our agony.  
Hush now thy wounded heart and dry thy tears,  
For see, the East uplifts us wings of Dawn.

*[They climb the stair to the housetop.  
As they look away toward the battle's  
rout the clouds part, and over them  
breaks the full brightness of the  
sun. . . .]*

THE END



THE COUNTRY LIFE PRESS  
GARDEN CITY, N.Y.